

The Awakening of The Sixth Sense

By

MOT REYWAS
"

A Look into the Great Unknown

*The Awakening
of
The Sixth Sense*

Published by

THOMAS SAWYER SPIVEY

Pool Hill Farm

Shawneetown, Illinois

1935

16.2775

57

Copyrighted by

THOMAS SAWYER SPIVEY

1935

NO. 1000
AMERICAN

DEDICATION

I dedicate this work to men who have the courage to acknowledge the truth when they find it, and the moral strength to resent attempts to guide them away from the natural paths which lead to the broadest exercise of thought, logic and reason.

Such men may rightfully assume a place among the gods of nature.

906253

PREFACE

I submitted specimen chapters of this work to three of the most conspicuous persons in the literary world.

One was the head of a great educational institution.

One was a conspicuous protestant clergyman.

One was a catholic bishop.

The first responded in the following terse language:

"Go see a specialist. Your spinal cord is twisted."

The second responded:

"You shake my faith in a God, that he has spared you long enough to complete this blasphemous work".

The third did not deign a reply.

This vain conceit; this bigoted "I cannot be wrong" attitude of men who are supposed to be moral and educational guides to the less fortunate, is the target at which I am shooting. Previous experience has shown me that I have more than once spotted the bulls-eye. I have challenged them to come shoot with me, but have only received cold sneers, and impudent indifference.

If such men could know how amusing this is to me, they would doubtless change their attitude, and return to the wheel, and the burning-stake.

It is a matter of chagrin, and bitter disappointment, that they realize that any conspicuous act to show resentment would expose the horrible truth, that I have revealed a system of duplicity and false-pretense to arouse the world.

It is true, while I have written and published many works, my word pictures are not found hanging in the halls of fame, because I have painted only pictures of devils instead of pictures of "the gods."

I have not sought to be sainted, because I have felt no desire to have my bones dumped into the rotting junk-piles of "bones of the saints" in the Pantheon at Rome.

I may become a martyr to a cause, but it makes me smile, that I have placarded the highway in this direction, so that should I become a martyr, hell will be to pay in this happy land of hill-billies and hijackers.

I will introduce our two important characters in this story.

"Grub" symbolizes the untrammelled youth, left alone to follow the natural bent of unprejudiced thought and research.

"The Doctor" is the generous minded searcher after the truth.

Neither knows the stubborn restraint of prejudice, nor the drastic discipline of minds bent upon guiding humanity at large away from natural truths.

This work is full of crudities, from a literary viewpoint, but every statement of truth and fact may be relied upon as being based upon the best obtainable authority.

I feel no doubt of its accomplishing its purpose to guide its readers toward independent thought along forbidden lines.

This work may seem eccentric, and far-fetched, but to those who think and reason, it will be a placer-mine of pleasing discoveries.

THE AUTHOR

Pool Hill Farm,
Shawneetown, Ill.
1935

The Awakening

By

MOT REYWAS

CHAPTER I

"Come, Grub, what are you staring at the wall for? Get busy, boy!"

This peremptory command was addressed to a motionless young man, who was seated in a straight-back chair and staring blankly at the wall.

Receiving no reply the Doctor looked at the youth for a moment, then went cautiously near him and peered in his face. To his astonishment Grub's eyes were wide open, and he appeared to be in a trance. The Doctor looked at the wall and saw a circular piece of white paper, about the size of a silver dollar, apparently pasted upon it.

Stepping lightly to the wall he removed the paper, and Grub immediately awakened, with a start, and looked about the room in a dazed and confused manner.

Uh, hu! You will fool with hypnotism, eh?" said the Doctor, and he looked the boy carefully over.

"Wait a minute, doctor, watch me," and Grub picked up the piece of paper, slapped it against the wall, and it stuck there. Removing it he handed it to the Doctor, saying:

"Now you do it."

The Doctor good-naturedly pressed the paper against the wall and it immediately dropped to the floor. Repeatedly he tried the experiment, alternating with Grub, but it would not adhere for him. He looked questioningly at Grub.

"Well, Doctor, we have made a great discovery. Automatic trance, with exaggerated mental vision, is a practical thing, neither phenomenal nor dangerous. In fact, it is not nearly so dangerous as inducing sleep by the use of narcotics."

And Grub cocked his head to one side and looked at the surprised Doctor.

"Where did you get that stuff?" growled the Doctor, with an amused and skeptical stare.

"I took a shot out of that blue tube over there," and Grub pointed to a long blue glass tube, resting in a wire holder.

"What!" yelled the Doctor, springing in to the air. "You took that inside of you. My god! Grub, what have you done? Go to the hospital at once and die there. Don't stay here and die. Why, that is rank poison." And the excited Doctor nearly twisted his fingers off in his great agitation.

"So is arsenic a deadly poison," calmly replied Grub, "but when administered in proper doses it is a most effective alterative remedy. You must know that, Doctor. It especially affects nutrition of the nervous system. Now, Doctor, it was your experiments with arsenic which first started me working along a special line. Do you remember the poor fellow you had here with St. Vitas dance? I was watching his convulsive movements, and the results of your medication, and I could almost name the nerves being affected by your potions. I analyzed your remedy, and found its only active element was arsenic.

"Without going into the merits of arsenic as a medicinal agent, the fact that it acts upon the nervous system, to correct muscular irregularities, caused me to experiment in search for a drug which would practically suspend muscular action, and exaggerate mental activity, without impairing the physical functions. I found that a self-induced, waking trance was the condition I sought.

"It is easier to induce the trance state than it is to break it, because physical action is necessary to again reverse and turn the mental action into an afferent process.

"We may send a messenger so far away we cannot recall him with our voice. That is exactly the process. While he is near enough to remain under our control, we can see and experience all that he does, but far away from us, he is having experiences we know nothing about.

"The mechanical divorce of mind and body may be made that radical. By intelligent practice, and the judicious use of chemical agents, we may develop a phenomenal, yet controlled, state of mentation."

Suddenly realizing that he was delivering a scientific lecture, with only the Doctor as his audience, Grub hesitated.

"Go on, Grub, you deeply interest me," said the Doctor.

"Well," continued Grub, "we know that opium is an agent of exaggerated dreams. I was aware that you were conducting one of your experiments with opium, and I judiciously experimented with your mixture by graduated potions, and I have not only experienced no bad effects, but have actually solved the problem of wholly reversing the mental and physical processes. I have converted the mental process into an afferent or attracting force to be controlled and manipulated at will, and the physical process into an efferent force to merely bind the life processes together in the temporary suspension of mental guidance. The result, therefore, is to form a juncture, or contact, with some medium which eliminates time and distance.

"Doctor, I am convinced that this is a direct contact with the universal mentation, a reservoir, or pabulum, which receives the living thoughts of organic being. Prentiss Mulford was right when he said 'Thoughts are things.'

"I can demonstrate, beyond all discussion, that there is a universal mind, in which resides every thought emanating from living matter. This is memory. Hence, a controlled subconscious state forms a mental vacuum into which pours the all-wise universal pabulum. Desire translates this into the knowledge we seek.

"'Ask and it shall be given you, seek and ye shall find' (Matt. 7:7; John 16:24).

"You may think it strange to hear me quote the Bible to substantiate my theories, but you will know later that I have uncovered a great mystery. Call it tragedy or romance which you will."

"Stop!" almost screamed the Doctor. "Either you are gone crazy or you are making me crazy. I never heard you so talkative before." And he passed to the shelf and lifted the blue glass tube from the rack.

"Did you take your dose out of this?" he demanded.

Grub smilingly nodded assent.

"My god, boy, I hardly know what to say or do," and in his great agitation he turned away and passed his hand across his face. Pausing, he picked up the piece of paper at which Grub had been staring. He examined it, turning it over to view both sides. He replaced the tube, then demanded:

"What has this to do with all of it?"

"Well, you see, mental concentration is essential to release the subjective mind from active contact with physical centres. This concentration brings you subconsciously in contact with some tremendous power which actually communicates with you, telling you what to do and when to do it. It was this strange influence which suggested to me the use of the target for concentration. The power of mental projection becomes so great it actually causes the target to cleave to the wall, as you observed. When the moment comes for your subconscious mind to assume its normal state, the paper automatically drops off the wall, and your trance ends."

The Doctor interrupted with a question:

"What occurs while you are in the trance condition?"

Grub was deeply confused as he replied:

"Doctor, I dare not attempt to tell you. I am not insane, and I do not want you to think so. But my visions are wholly practical, rational and logical in every sense, as though I were viewing them in a normal manner. But, time and distance are wholly eliminated. It is purely a spiritual state."

"Does it suggest an individual spirit, independent of the physical body, being released from the body?" asked the Doctor.

"No, it is definitely an essenic contact. That thing we

call spirit within us remains in the body. The physical processes are partially and temporarily suspended, to give to the spiritual, or master power over the interpretations by the brain centres, an opportunity to examine external phenomena. The universal mind is a potential, essenic pabulum, seeking vacuum in which to manifest. We form such vacuum by concentration, which temporarily suspends physical demands upon the cerebro-spinal nervous system. Hence, you observe the body at absolute rest during these trances."

"Uh, huh!" grunted the Doctor. "Perhaps that astute Jesuit, Descartes, was not far wrong in his theory of a 'third median eye,' located somewhere in the *medulla oblongata*."

"Doctor, I know it sounds conceited on the part of a person of my age and experience, but I believe I can go Descartes one better. I attribute this present phenomenon to the *awakening* of the moot *sixth sense*, and the sense of universal being is the true *fourth dimension* of *material bodies*. In future, I, at least, shall refer to the *length, breadth, thickness*, and the *sense of being*, of material things."

"That isn't so bad, Grub," thoughtfully said the Doctor. "How long have you been practicing this?"

"Not so long; perhaps a month," replied Grub. "But I am not quite finished with my lecture. There is a deep lesson in this, Doctor. I have been delving in the collateral branches of this subject for a long time. Let me explain my views about this trance power."

"You know that humanity at large has been deprived of the higher education, and the right of scientific, speculative thought, for about two thousand years. This has rendered the great majority incapable of consecutive, concentrated thought. You also are aware that any long disuse of muscles or tissues renders them dormant, and incapable of again assuming their normal functions. This is equally true of the nervous centres. This sad condition has deprived the people of the natural progression toward contact with the universal mentation."

"Thanks to you, Doctor, I have never been thus ham-

pered, and your influence and example has made me a thinker from childhood. I am positive that the centres of thought having been permitted to take a normal course of development, without the influence of prejudiced minds, the *sixth sense*, has been *awakened*. The church attempts to reveal this possibility in the fabulous infancy of Jesus. At the age of twelve years he was expounding wisdom to the older men."

"It seems to me, Grub, much of this is superficial at this particular time," said the Doctor. "I want to learn more about the process and what produces the strange faculty which you have so suddenly acquired."

"Following each trance, I am filled with an overpowering desire to reveal what is shown to me," said Grub.

"Have you been drinking much water out of our bottle there?" asked the Doctor, pointing to the large, inverted glass jar which contained their usual supply of pure water, used for both laboratory and drinking purposes.

"I drink no other water to speak of," replied Grub.

"Well, now, Grub, having recovered my wits, I think I have the laugh on you. I recall that I thoroughly cleansed this tube a month ago, and it contains nothing more potent, now, than stale rain water," and the Doctor laughed heartily, as he was about to empty the water out of the tube.

"Wait, Doctor, don't empty it," and he almost forcibly took the tube from the Doctor's hand. "This is too important to make any mistakes."

"Well, what is there in that?" gasped the Doctor.

"Let us place this under your most powerful microscope, Doctor," said Grub, "to see if it contains living germs."

For a long time they worked, making an exhaustive microscopic examination, and chemical analysis, of the water in both the tube and the container.

To their amazement, they found in the water an unknown germ. This opened up a wide range of speculative thought and research.

"You, also, have been drinking the same water, Doctor," said Grub.

"No, I always drink the water from the well. I do not approve of drinking water accumulated in cisterns," replied the Doctor.

"Well, this water seems to be chemically safe. It has not impaired my health. I'd try it a while if I were you, Doctor," said Grub.

"Ha, ha!" laughed the Doctor, "are you equally certain it has not impaired your mind?"

"On the contrary, it has made me a mental giant. I have at my command all the wisdom of the past," enthusiastically declared Grub.

"How about the future?" asked the Doctor.

"You have asked me an important question, Doctor," responded Grub. "I do not seem to be able to see into the future. It suggests the taking of the mind back to the beginning, spreading out a universal wisdom, hence, I conclude that it is a revelation of those things and events which have been recorded up to this time, and, as I have said, it is not an efferent power which can peer into the future.

"Perhaps with long and understanding training the human mind may blend with the creative mind in a manner to anticipate future events. This has been the ambition of thinking minds through all ages.

"So-called prophecy, in the christian Bible, is based upon such a possibility, but only the principle is involved, for these prophecies are rank false-pretense. It is a sinister fact that they attempt to fulfill them by creating conditions to meet such necessity. It is a common thing to find following each pretended fulfillment something like this:

"'Now all this was done that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets' (Matt. 1:22; 2:15; 2:23, and twenty other references in Matthew and John alone). The humbug character of these prophecies is quickly grasped in the following:

"'I will raise up a prophet and will put my words in his mouth.

"'But the prophet which shall presume to speak a word

in my name, which I have not commanded him to speak, even that prophet shall die.

“‘When a prophet speaketh in the name of the Lord, if the thing follow not, nor come to pass, that is the thing which the Lord hath not spoken’ (Deut. 18).”

“How is that for a sure-thing game?”

“I am somewhat puzzled to find you so familiar with the Bible, Grub, and your apt and appropriate quotations must mean much, but just now, I am more interested in solving this chemical problem. When did we fill that outside tank?” And the Doctor awaited Grub’s reply with some eagerness.

“Why, don’t you remember that terrible storm, when the rain ran off the roof in such torrents the tank overflowed? Gee! I’ll never forget that lightning,” was Grub’s earnest reply.

“Now that you recall it, yes, I also remember the atmosphere was surcharged with *hydrogen sulphide*,” said the Doctor. “Maybe we’ve found something, Grub. Hydrogen sulphide is a powerful narcotic. It is ordinarily a product of the putrefication of organic matter, but just where the clouds absorbed this, in this particular instance, it would be difficult to determine.

“It is curious that you mentioned arsenic, when we first began this conversation. Look at that yellow precipitate in the bottom of this tube; that is the precipitate of arsenic.

“Hand me that small bottle on the second shelf—yes, that one; that is *lead acetate*.

“I’ll dip this paper in it and test the water in the tube.

“There it is! See how black it turns. Yes, even now, there are traces of *hydrogen sulphide* in the water.

“Now, the outside tank is practically sealed, and our water jar wholly so.

“I tell you, my boy, this is a serious thing. You are loaded with some kind of germs, because of drinking this particular water. Whether it is harmful or not remains to be seen.” And the Doctor replaced the articles and pushed his hands deep in his pockets, and began to pace the floor in deep

thought. Suddenly he walked to the water jar, drew a glass of water, tasted it, then swallowed the balance, saying:

"Why, there is no objectionable odor or flavor to this water. Not a whiff of sulphur."

"I've been thinking," said Grub, "if that germ you found is in the water from the jar, the whole body of water is potentially inoculated with it; but if the exposure of the open tube to the air sets up a germinating process, the water in the closed jar contains only the chemical life forces, and these may possibly develop in one's system the same germs. Sulphur is one of the basic elements in early organic life.

"Could it be possible, Doctor, to originate a germ within our own physical economy which would endow us with power to project our subjective minds to an intimate contact with the universal consciousness?"

"That is too far-fetched to discuss just now," replied the doctor. "But, I'm going to drink that water for ten days and make daily notes of the results."

"When you can place that paper against the wall and it will stick there, you may know you are saturated with the universal germs. But, Doctor, beginning tomorrow, we should do nothing else but bottle that water until no more remains in the tank, for that dreadful storm brought to us the very elixir of universal life. We may never get it again. We cannot take chances of reproducing it by artificial means. I believe this germ is the original first-shot out of the universal laboratory; the electron—N. O. C. H. = 43—perfected into the primordial clot of living pabulum out of which the primary cells of both animal and vegetable being arise."

"Yes, Grub, we know so little of the true origin of life. Maybe accident has brought us some of the ancient wisdom. Let us say no more, till I am ready to make my test of your theory ten days hence," and the Doctor passed into his laboratory den.

CHAPTER II

The ten-day period of probation slipped quickly by, as though time was in league with Grub to convince the Doctor.

Grub came into the room where he and the Doctor had previously held their discussion on the merits of rain water to produce the universal germs.

The youth paused as he beheld the Doctor, seated in the same identical chair previously occupied by himself, and staring blankly at the wall, and at the same disc of paper used as a target by himself.

Grub did not immediately arouse him, but quietly waited for results.

It was some minutes before the disc dropped to the floor, when the Doctor heaved a great sigh.

Upon observing Grub, he looked a bit embarrassed, then laughed an hysterical sort of laugh as he arose, saying:

"Grub, you are truly a great scientist, but I advise that we keep this a deep, dark secret until we have perfected it. It is all and more than you dreamed it to be."

"Well, Doctor, it's a relief to me that you have been so successful in convincing yourself that it truly is a new science we are revealing. I quite agree that we should perfect it before we attempt to exploit it," and Grub picked up the bit of paper and placed it on the mantel.

"I found I could make the disc adhere three days ago, but upon attempting to concentrate my mind upon it, I could only see great, rolling clouds of colors. While this seems to be clearing a bit I have had no other visions," said the Doctor.

"Yes, I should have explained the process to you more fully. I had made it a practice to attach the paper to the wall; keep my eyes upon it while backing to my chair; then I wholly concentrated upon the disc, until it seemed to disappear amidst vast clouds of brilliant colors, all the shades of the spectrum. And, Doctor, it just now occurs to me, these waves are in consecutive order, from center to circum-

ference, and the colors or circles in the order of the spectrum, the center violet, then follow indigo, blue, green, yellow, orange and red. There is a theory that the planets, Mercury, Venus, Earth, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, and Neptune are identified in the order of these colors. I am much impressed by this additional suggestion that we are digging our way into the universal world.

"It is when the violet centre seems to turn to a steel gray, almost white, that the field begins to clear and the visions begin. Oh! another suggestion comes to me this moment. Why, Doctor, there is no doubt about our having entered the living field of this planetary system. This final field portrays the reflecting powers of the Moon principle, and this is the real source of our natural wisdom on earth. This will be a big lesson later for us. Now, does this approximate your experience?"

"Exactly, up to the steel-like centre, and I have had no other visions, and I do not know when the disc dropped off the wall," said the Doctor.

"Your next sitting will bring you fully into the charmed field," said Grub. "The disc dropped off the wall but a moment before you aroused.

"When I first began my experiments, I had two fears. First, I could not guess what effect the vivid colors might have upon my eyes or my brain; next, I was fearful that it might be of a hypnotic nature which could place one in a cataleptic state; but, with practice, I overcame these fears. I will now tell you what your next experience will be. Upon awakening, you will be seized with an uncontrollable desire to do authomatic writing, apparently intended to record and reveal invisible wisdom with which your mind comes in contact while in the trance state. Just a moment." And Grub stepped to his own cabinet desk, and brought forth a large quantity of sheets upon which were writings and drawings.

"These are amazing revelations, Doctor, treating mainly of a comparison of the human structures with planetary similitudes. I am just beginning to solve the mystery by interpreta-

tion, and I must tell you at once, they have revealed that the christian enterprise is wholly personified gnostic wisdom. It is so intricate, that, they themselves have lost the key—the fabulous keys, of heaven and earth, handed to St. Peter, the foundation of the church.”

“Grub, this becomes more amazing as it is revealed,” said the Doctor. “Its possibilities seem endless. The most important thing to solve, I think, is, to what extent we may control this new power to apply it to practical ends, and in a way which will unite us in common purposes, that we may work together, that we may aid each other in a systematic work.”

“My own experiences intimate such possibility,” said Grub. “But let me ask: have you had any intimation of a contact with a conscious personality?”

“Yes, I seemed to sense the presence of some invisible being attempting to encourage me,” said the Doctor.

“That’s it,” exclaimed Grub. “It is the subconscious mind urging us on. It is eager for the universal wisdom. Next it will speak to you. It will say:

“‘I am with you. I will protect you’.”

This was a critical period in a tremendous experiment. Both of these students of mystery were convinced that they were on the point of demonstrating a great scientific discovery, and they were eager to delve deeply in the subject.

Dr. Parshal Heim had raised from a child this fine young man whom he had named Grub. His real name was Robert Bontee.

They were pals, these thinking men, engaged in a profession most congenial and edifying.

In view of the fact that the Doctor was quite a wealthy man, their work was more a pleasing pastime than a business.

Their laboratory was well-equipped for all kinds of experimental chemistry, astronomy and general scientific and philosophical research. They were now fully launched upon the greatest experimental adventure ever essayed by men, in

an attempt to establish a human contact with a universal mentation.

Six months later they had progressed to a point where, arm in arm, they could step back into the past and actually participate in the living events of which history teaches little, and that little beclouded and censored by designing political intrigues, and selfish misrepresentations.

They could view the frivolous and puny civilization at a glance, and understand the motive of every inspired human motion.

They were filled with disgust at the narrow, stingy, selfish attitude assumed by those to whom mankind had been entrusted for guidance and development. Self-glorification seemed to be the sole object of men chosen as leaders. They sought to be made heroes and gods. They shrank with horror from the truth that, human intellect was but a rudimental remnant of the original intent of nature, that man should become the highest manifestation of universal mentation. A thousand years of enforced ignorance had done its work well, leaving all mankind, in some degree, insane.

This morning they were seated in the Doctor's cozy library, engaged in one of their eager discussions of the great problem.

The Doctor held in his hand a book on Animal Magnetism, by Deleuze.

"Now, Grub," he began, "I believe we may find here a solution of the mystery which has apparently linked our minds up with the universal mentation."

"I am most anxious to know if it involves a real personality, or conscious individuality," eagerly responded Grub.

"No, not in the sense that you mean, but it does involve intelligent forces, which are almost human, although compelled to follow arbitrary lines. Our connection is a contact, and not a projection," said the Doctor.

"Well, what I wish to fully determine is, have we formed a contact with anything which resembles the idea of a christian God," hesitatingly said Grub.

"No, not in the remotest degree. The christian God character is a puny weakling, compared with this combination of natural, intelligent forces. The christian religion, which never has been a religion except in the pagan sense, must now cease tormenting humanity with its blaa-blaa, and show its grim and bloody hands as a ruthless, political intrigue. There will remain no further room for argument for the continuance of the all-consuming churches.

"I do not believe the present generations can recover the original mental powers, but if our lives are spared, Grub, we shall attempt to blaze a highway over which new generations may return to the way of mental evolution originally contemplated by nature. But, as long as mankind exists upon this planet, the scars of the degradation of inspired ignorance will mar the face of humanity.

"Mean, contemptible priesthoods snatched away the greatest gifts of nature, that they might enslave the greater mankind to their pleasures and glorification as gods upon earth. Failing to usurp the reserve powers of nature, common to all living creatures, because of their own sheer ignorance, they converted their own selfish enterprise into a vast political machine, which has been so skillfully manipulated it rules the world today. Its so-called congregations are but trained militant mobs, so filled with superstitious fear, and blind fanaticism, they cannot see or understand the truth. It is organization which holds this vast machine in power.

"You and I will live to see this all changed, when this wonderful discovery develops into a simple, understandable, instructive science, to be taught in our public schools," and the Doctor paused.

"That gives me great relief. You are becoming more enthusiastic than I, Doctor," said Grub.

"Now let me explain what I have been pondering," continued the Doctor. "This power, which we are now able to demonstrate, is allied with magnetism, developed to a degree of mental equation with known facts.

"I give you credit for the basic discovery, Grub, and that

is your 'first shot out of the universal laboratory,' the first electric molecule, born out of the original or primary electron and forming the magnetic life cell, the formula of which is $N. O. C. H. = 43$. Which we quickly recognize as the first living clot out of which arise the life germs of both vegetable and animal organisms.

"Your conclusion that this cell is the connecting link between the human mind and the universal mind, is the true discovery. An understanding contact is the *awakening* of conscious universal being.

"We are in contact with the atmosphere and draw from it our breath.

"We are in contact with the earth and the waters and draw from them our solid and liquid nourishments.

"Why then should we not be in conscious contact with the source of our mental nourishment, drawn direct from the vibratory world?

"Nitrogen, oxygen, carbon and hydrogen, then, are the four primary atoms which form the first living molecule, and this cell is a magnetized body, because of the fact, that the four primary elements, of which it is formed, are mutually united, and held in suspense until this cell germinates and enters into the constructive processes of material growth. It is the living germ of this original cell which retains and carries into the greater body, the universal contact.

"By suspending certain physical activities, and practicing the mental concentration, such as we practice, we supply the brain with an overplus of these magnetic cells, and thus form a reactive contact with the universal pabulum from which they are drawn.

"Let me demonstrate this by a material simile. We have two stations, which communicate with each other by sending back and forth a messenger. We unite these two stations by tube or wire and form a permanent and continuous connection.

"This is not altogether new, Grub. We find a positive knowledge of your wave theory in Greek mythology. The

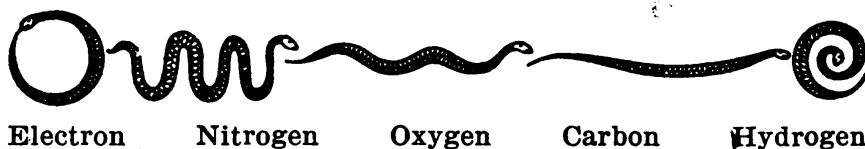
Greek philosophers were aware of this primary process of forming the first cell, even to making the earth a symbol of the molecule.

"This simple diagram reveals this ancient knowledge.



"The *caduceus*, the emblem of Mercury, plainly reveals the process by which this primary life cell is formed.

"Bring your drawing showing the primary set of creative waves. Yes, that," and Grub spread upon the table a sheet showing a series of waves made with the progressive attitudes of serpents, the ancient symbols of wisdom.



"You explained to me, Grub, identically the process revealed by the *caduceus*.

"The carbon and the hydrogen represent the earth and water, and the oxygen and nitrogen surround these as an atmosphere.

"The product is a little planet.

"Now for the story of Mercury and his *caduceus*.

"Mercury was the messenger and god of commerce, between the heaven and the earth. He was walking one day, with this carbon staff in his hand, and he observed two serpents contending. He stuck the end of his staff in the earth, and the two serpents immediately entwined about it and were immediately at peace. That is symbolized by the *caduceus*.

"Huh!" grunted Grub. "That makes the earth itself a magnetized body."

"Exactly so, and that accounts for the so-called law of gravitation," said the Doctor.

"This Mercury is always pictured with a cheerful coun-

tenance, as the messenger of the gods, and with his emblem of commerce he is the ambassador of peace. Nevertheless, he is the prince of thieves. He steals even the lightning from the heavens, and attempts to steal the thunder from Jupiter, but has not the means to confine it. The serpent symbolizes the lightning entwining itself about the trees and passing into the earth.

"But that is enough of Mercury now. Let's examine the subject of animal magnetism," and the Doctor reached for his *Deleuze*.

"To begin, Grub, I want to impress upon your mind that animal magnetism was a wonderful discovery. It came near to becoming an applied science.

"Important surgical operations were effected without the slightest pain, or evil effects, on the part of the patients. It was rudely condemned, and its use was suppressed. Dangerous anaesthetics were substituted.

"Thus, like many others, a great scientific discovery was snatched away from mankind, on the contemptible excuse that the practice was dangerous and could be used for criminal ends. The same charge could be brought against any human necessity.

"The truth is simple. Under the influence of magnetism, narcotics, and alcoholic liquors, the mind is exalted, and exaggerated in its activities. *The one great fear of the ecclesiasts is the discovery that it suppressed the original gnostic wisdom, which is a traditional record to be revived by inspiration in periods of mental exaltation.* This is why it attempts to suppress every avenue by which the greater masses may come in contact with scientific education and research.

"For two thousand years this selfish thing has striven to monopolize learning by the few, that the greater mankind might be securely bound in the slavely of ignorance, which has developed into the curse of humanity under the pressure of protected fanaticism.

"The simple facts about magnetism are these:

"Stronger minds have the faculty of exercising a super-

influence over weaker persons, by directing toward them certain vital mental forces, exactly as a strong person, physically, might bring food and comfort to weaker invalid persons.

"It may be said it is the exercise of a strong will power; nevertheless, the patient must be susceptible through confidence and belief.

"You will readily see that the church has practically confiscated magnetic principles. Without *faith* the church could not hold its following; without ignorance there could be no belief or faith.

"*Gnosis* means to know, knowledge.

"*Faith* is to believe, ignorance.

"The fight against magnetism was brief, because it was between a new and little known science, and an established body fed up on religious fanaticism. The church won, and, as usual, humanity suffered a tremendous loss.

"Grub, gnosticism, and it is corroborated by your recent experiments, intimates a *universal thought in common*, of which the church held a holy fear. This is why it bound humanity in ignorance for a thousand years, to break all possibility of the development of such a faculty, by breaking natural universal contact.

"I believe, however, we have it on the theory of the magnetic healers, as far as I am able to judge at this time. The theory is, that a substance emanates from the magnetizer, and is conveyed to the subject, any distance, by will-power. This is called the magnetic fluid. It is admitted, however, that the nature of this fluid is unknown. It seems strange they have not recognized a universal medium of an electric character.

"The fact that actual beneficial results are anticipated and registered, proves that some intelligent influence is transmitted to the patient.

"Now, here is my conclusion: the magnetic spell is a trance condition brought on by suggestion, strong desire, and absolute faith or belief that relief will be effected. Attraction and repulsion are the agents of transmission, and this

action is identical with the transmission of will through the nervous system of the human body, from cell to cell, in the medullary matter—this is practically mental healing.

“The healer has no other power than the power of suggestion sufficient to concentrate the mind of the patient upon absolute belief in some power to give relief, and that is the will power to conquer the disease.

“‘All things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, *believing* ye shall receive’ (Matt. 21:22).

“They understood the principle.

“To receive the magnetic suggestion, the subject must be in a receptive mood and have faith in the process.

“‘Faith is the substance of things hoped for, evidence of things not seen’ (Heb. 11:1).

“The supposed projection of the magnetic power is identical with the ordinary mental process, with the vibratory, universal pabulum as the medium. Therefore it is not a fluid, but a vibratory force, set in motion by the will of the operator, assisted by the strong desire and belief of the subject. Two persons can push or pull a material object with greater force than one. Two persons can agitate a body of water more than one. Why, then, may not two minds, deeply concentrated upon the mental pabulum, realize similar results?

“We at once see that the essential conditions in magnetizing are: first, the will of the subject, strengthened by the will of the magnetic physician; second, confidence on the part of both the operator and the subject, and thirdly, strong mutual desire for the specific results. This is wholly a magnetic communication between embodied minds entering into agreement to draw upon some invisible power. The medium in this process is, of necessity, an abstract and immaterial thing. This is our electric pabulum, Grub. It is not matter, but the original source of the primary forces which create the material bodies. It is the electric molecule which carries the healing power. It begets the will power to cast out diseased cells and absorb new and healthy ones.”

“May I give my impression of the magnetic process drawn

from your discourse, Doctor, to see if I fully understand?" asked Grub.

"I am glad to have you suggest it," replied the Doctor.

"As I see it," began Grub, "the operator merely emphasizes a desire to perform a specific cure, and registers that desire by mental projection into the electric pabulum, having absolute faith and belief that his desire will be fulfilled. The receptive mind of the patient, having a foreknowledge of this operation, and equal faith, is the recipient of the projected suggestion, from the electric pabulum. We have here one mind positively directing the message, and the other mind attracting it. Yes, Doctor, that may well be named magnetic action. There is no substantial exchange between the two minds, but merely mental suggestion, and absolute faith, guiding and directing the current to the seat of desire, and to strengthen the will-power of the patient.

" 'But let him ask in faith nothing wavering' (James 1:6).

"Faith once established, blocks all future interference. It is clear that christianity is wholly founded upon blind faith, but it has failed to make good its promises of substantial results.

"I can see a reason why the church opposed magnetic healing, although admitting its efficacy.

"The direct action of magnetism is supposed to cease upon the withdrawal of the suggestion of the magnetizer. Nevertheless, the faith of the subject may be sufficient to cause him to continue experimenting, with the possibility of *awakening the sixth sense*. This is what the church fears. 'Let him ask in faith, nothing wavering' (1 James 1:6).

"This point is well taken, Grub," said the Doctor. "It was one of the arguments against magnetism that it was attempting to usurp the healing powers of Jesus Christ, meaning the church.

"The main fear was, that, magnetism would transfer faith in the church to faith in an invisible healing power. 'Holding the mystery of the faith'—a duty of the deacons of the church (1 Tim. 3:9).

"The advocates of magnetism insist that a fluid passes between the operator and the subject. This would seem to intimate no belief in a universal medium. Therefore, if we demonstrate such a medium, we automatically prove that the human mind can project mental will-power for external purposes, as it directs the operations of the physical body by nervous impulse, hence, this projecting power is equivalent to the temporary release of some faculty of the subjective mind.

"I am convinced it is this subjective mind which attempts to communicate with us. Now, what would you say, Grub, if I advanced the idea that this subjective mind is one with the universal mind?"

"Gee! Doctor, that sure is a big idea," exclaimed Grub. "That would be the spirit of our body."

"Well, let's see if the concealed gnosticism of the Bible agrees with this," and the Doctor reached for his Bible and concordance.

"'God is a spirit' (John 4:24).

"'It is the spirit that quickeneth' (John 6:63).

"'Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you' (1 Cor. 3:16).

"This is an important thing, Grub. If we can release our subjective mind at will, it merely blends back into the original pabulum and becomes saturated with universal wisdom. This release is by our process of concentration, when the body, the 'temple of God,' is silent until he returns to bring us new inspiration and courage.

"It was generous in the advocates of magnetism to admit that every human being in some degree, possessed magnetic powers, for that is perfectly natural. These magnetic powers are attributes of the subconscious being—the power of attraction.

"It is logical that a strong, healthy, self-reliant person would exercise a dominant influence over a weaker person. Like exercising body and mind, the exercise of magnetism increases mental strength and confidence."

"But, Doctor, our experiments do not exactly correspond with magnetism," said Grub. "Instead of projecting a power, we solicit and attract external forces, for our visions are of external, and even unknown things. Unlike the fatigue of the magnetic exertions, one feels a great elation, and exhilaration, following a period of concentration, accompanied by an irresistible desire to write or relate what he has acquired."

"That is perfectly natural. The magnetic operator generously directs his forces toward the subject, thus depleting his own forces. The patient, on the contrary, feels regenerated, whereas, when one is his own magnetizer, he receives all the benefits, with the exhilarations. He is feasting upon life itself. As I have previously said, the desire to write, following the concentration, is the instinctive desire to record those invisible things which have come into the mind, before they fade like a dream.

"It was the feeling of weariness which caused the magnetizer to believe he was projecting a nervous fluid, whereas he was withholding nervous impulse from the functioning organs of the body, and exhausting this by depleting his own will power."

"That is very clear, Doctor. I readily see the difference," said Grub. "I must again express my belief that we have awakened the *sixth sense*."

"Yes. and that is the sense suppressed by a thousand years of brutally enforced ignorance," said the Doctor.

They then adjourned the sitting.

CHAPTER III

It was a calm, sunlit day; the library was evenly filled with a soft, silvery light, and all things seemed right for a perfect sitting.

They had preserved the magic disc, and it was agreed that this should be a test of the possibility of their combining their work in a manner to mutually pass into the trance condition together, and retain their individuality as in their waking hours.

The Doctor had laughingly suggested that they take a little journey together to break the monotony of abstract speculations.

"That suits me," quickly responded Grub. "I have been dreaming of travel in lands strange to me, with you who have traveled much over the world as a guide. I am sure it would be educational and instructive to me, and entertaining to you, could we be able to thus apply our new sense."

"We can try it," said the Doctor.

"Should we suggest our course before passing into our concentration?" asked Grub.

"Yes, I believe that would be the proper procedure," said the Doctor. "If it should prove to be practical, we probably would want to travel over Europe first, and it would be logical to begin with London."

Grub slapped the disc against the wall and it adhered.

They adjusted themselves in their chairs, side by side, at the table. At the Doctor's suggestion they clasped hands.

For an indefinite time only silence prevailed, when both perceptibly started, as though something had prodded them to awaken them. They had both heard a voice saying:

"I am with you; I will watch over you; I will protect you."

"Doctor," softly said Grub.

"Yes, Grub, I am perfectly competent," replied the Doctor. "But where are we? This doesn't look like London."

"Let us test whether we are seeing alike, Doctor," said Grub. "What is the most conspicuous thing you see?"

"London Bridge. Can you see it?" replied the Doctor. "But it doesn't seem natural."

"Ah, we're all right. I see it," said Grub.

A gentle voice spoke to them saying:

"I am your guide. Yes, you are in London." Slowly a form became visible and a strange figure appeared.

"And who are you, may I ask," said the Doctor.

"I am time," was the kindly reply. "Were you versed in mythology, you would recognize me, perhaps as Saturn, or maybe Chronus, or Cronus for short."

"Well, we shall be friendly, and call you Cronus, but how did you know we were coming to London?" said the Doctor.

"Time knows everything," replied Cronus.

"I have been in London before, but I can not recognize the place now. Not even London Bridge. I presume that is the bridge," said the Doctor.

Time laughed, saying: "Of course not. You perhaps know all that is interesting about modern London, of the twentieth century, but you are now viewing London of the eighteenth century."

"Where did the name London originate?" asked the Doctor.

"Its derivation is from *Llyn-Din*, signifying 'the town on the lake.' It was the capital of the Saxon kingdom of Essex, and was known in the time of the Heptarchy as *Lunden-Ceaster*," said Cronus.

"By the way, Cronus, I have been trying to recall you as a mythological character, and standing as you now are, I do recognize the figure of Chronus, as pictured in my books on mythological gods," said the Doctor.

"That is the only way you could know me, for I have never assumed a physical form," replied Cronus.

"Well Cronus, you evidently have some mysterious knowledge of the causes which have brought us here, therefore, we

must wholly trust to your guidance and judgment until we may feel our feet on firm ground here," said the Doctor.

"Impossible!" exclaimed Cronus. "Your material feet are not in London. Your feet will remain dormant until you break your mental contact with the universal medium. By virtue of my universal knowledge, I have attached myself to your work, and I give it my friendly approval. You are here by your own suggestion. I alone can endow you with the mental power to separate one from another, the events and images recorded in the universal mind. Time alone is the measurer. This enables me to guide you intelligently, so you may record, in your own incarnated consciousness, those visions which will best please and edify you. You will readily recognize this as the process by which pictures which you read about are reflected into your memory."

"Then, according to that, you possess the sense of selectivity," said the Doctor.

"Yes, indeed," quickly responded Cronus. "I have been the measurer of all created things, through all the ages, and that censorship has exercised the power to reject by suppression, as well as to promote by judicious selection."

"You vindicate our worldly philosophers, Darwin and Spencer, in their theory of selectivity," remarked Grub.

"They but reveal the processes of evolution so specifically measured by time," said Cronus.

"But I must inform you that your decision to spend your time in travel at this period of your physical experiments may lose your contact. It is suggested by carnal desire for thrill, which is a physical desire. While I may suggest, I cannot construct. I am but the measurer of human events. I can, however, reveal to you the results, be they good or evil. You are doubtless amazed at the realistic character of this magnetic trance in which you rest, but I suggest caution in its exercise. I must warn you of its dangers. You must not deceive yourselves in the belief that your spirit has stepped out of your body while in a somnolent state. This state is irritating to the physical body while your mind is consciously

in contact with the universal mentation. It is especially trying upon the heart, which must blindly maintain circulation while your subjective self is on a mental jag.

"The sense of selectivity must be cautiously guided, that you may not gather thistles instead of lilies. It is the mind which chooses between good and evil, therefore, you may over-burden the physical machine with harmful things, with the universe to select from.

"With judicious training you will be able to extend the physical endurance and control carnal desire.

"Therefore, I cannot be responsible for guiding you into the midst of the clash and jangle of city life as you know it in the twentieth century. I do not approve of your taking these long excursions until you are more experienced in the exercise of this wonderful gift of nature. But, now that you have made the first venture, I shall exercise my privilege of leading you away from frivolities, and will give you some lessons in the heavy tragedies of so-called human progression, by introducing to you the great monuments of human error.

"Moreover, I shall assume mastership over your excursions for a period of time, and I shall limit your travels into Europe to a few excursions, with limited but instructive experiences."

"We are wholly subject to your leadership, Cronus," said the Doctor. "But you say we are in a magnetic trance. Then magnetism, as applied by magnetic healers, has some merit."

"Why, it sustains life. It binds body and soul together. It is the balance of power between the embodied mind and the universal mentation," said Cronus.

"Your embodied, individual consciousness is your spirit, the organized forces which construct and maintain your physical mechanism by mutuality. Your spirit knows nothing about form, except as pictured and recorded in memory, and stored in your brain to be *awakened* and revealed by a reflective contact with the universal medium. The stored wis-

dom of time is identical with the stored memory of organic being."

"Truly you startle me," exclaimed the Doctor. "Do you mean that all these visible things about us, that great bridge, for instance, are not real and yet they have distinct forms? How can a thing have form and occupy space and not be material?"

"I suppose all those elephants, horses, houses and steamships, and a myriad of other living pictures stored in your memory, a vision of which you can recall at will, are real, material things. How on earth did you crowd them into your limited cranium? You are now peering into the memory of all past ages," was Cronus' reply.

"Ah, that is an apt explanation, Cronus. Necessarily we also must vision things which were not in our previous experiences," said the Doctor.

"I have a revelation," exclaimed Grub. "That explains the story of Noah and the ark."

"Why, of course," said Cronus. "Common sense tells you the story of the ark cannot be true. The cubic space in the alleged ark could not hold a millionth part of the animals allegedly placed in it. Moreover, one day's excrements would have buried ark and all beneath a mountain of good garden fertilizer."

"Say, this beats seeing London," said Grub. "I am something of a Bible student, Cronus. Please tell us something more about this fable."

"It's a very simple story," said Cronus. "The ark is the brain. Noah is the mind. *No* means place, *ah* means God. Therefore, Noah in the brain is the place of God. Meaning also rest and reflection. It is during rest and reflection we recall to memory visions of real things. We may vision a whole fleet of ships upon the sea, then, at will, ever afterwards, recall the picture in every proportion and detail.

"It is true, the original, of necessity, had to be real, else Noah could not have recalled the picture with understanding."

"I have wondered also that any one reading the Bible may not see the absurdity of the ark landing on Mt. Arrarat, seventeen thousand feet high, when the waters of the flood only rose about thirty-five feet," said Grub.

"You must not take these foolish fables literally. They are gnostic lessons concealed in figure. Measured by human rules it is criminal to teach these things literally," explained Cronus.

"While I have never delved deeply into the subject, all this upsets my previous idea of forms. I believed that form, to occupy space, must be material. Does this not imply that a disembodied spirit, as taught by the christian church, is possible?" remarked the Doctor.

"Would not that take the devil and his hosts into heaven along with God and his angels? They all go into hell, which means the grave. This is another cruel hoax of the church," said Cronus. "As long as the material body lives, it has a conscious power to interpret the universal memory, because the physical mechanism, essential to make that interpretation, is created for that purpose. When the heart ceases to beat, life, memory, and conscious being cease to be. If this is not true, why are we cumbered with a physical, material body? Never having seen a spirit body, it is natural for the christian scheme to promise a resurrection of the physical body to give individuality to the spirit. Now that individuality is merely a memory of the physical form in life, this reveals another absolute christian fake."

Again Grub exclaimed:

"Ha! another inspiration. We have previously agreed that every living creature is created for the fruit it will yield to the universal pabulum. Man is likened unto a tree in the Bible, to be cultivated like any other tree, for the fruit he yields to the universal church. Here on earth he is cultivated, physically or mentally, for the carnal things he yields to be sold to fat-bellied priests for spiritual things."

"You are growing wise, young man," said Cronus.

"Either make the tree good, and his fruit good, or else

make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt; for the tree is known by his fruit' (Matt. 12:33).

"They dared not put the word man, instead of tree, in this diabolical proposition. In Psalms 1:3, man is likened unto a fruit-bearing tree, and in many other places.

"Why cultivate a tree to bear either kind of fruit, if not for some personal use or traffic?

"'If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?' (1 Cor. 9:11).

"This whine doesn't come from God, it comes from the greedy priesthood, living off slaving humanity. They are speaking for themselves. But to the poor, ignorant fool who produces the carnal, worldly stuff, they yell:

"'To be carnally minded is death.

"'Because the carnal mind is enmity against God' (Romans 6:7).

"Now what are they doing with the carnal stuff?

"Why, they mean bread, mutton, and good wine on the lees."

"Well! I thought we were to have a visit in London, and here we are discussing and cussin' the merits of Bible absurdities," said the Doctor.

"Nevertheless you are not wasting your time. London is a material thing. You may prowl it at your pleasure, but it is edifying to examine these spiritual similitudes. They are a part of your spiritual feast. Wisdom is potential knowledge. Knowledge is revealed wisdom. Both are spiritual. Carnal things are worldly, sensual things. Material things, the product of human labor and suffering. This is what the pompous priesthood reaps. Do you suppose the Bible encourages the cultivation of evil fruits, if the church was not the market place, where may be a trafficking in these fruits?

"Think this over in your waking hours, Doctor. You may find the churches are fostering evil in your own country for the fruits this yields.

"The christian God is made to declare:

"'I create evil' (Isa. 45:7).

"'I frame evil against you' (Jer. 18:11).

"And now your first visit to London is ended," and Cronus disappeared.

The Doctor and Grub awakened as one, and sat looking, one at the other, for some silent moments.

"What do you remember, Grub?" asked the Doctor.

"Everything; but we certainly saw mighty little of London," replied Grub, as he seized his materials and began to rapidly record their experiences.

The Doctor thoughtfully walked toward his laboratory door, but suddenly turned and said:

"Grub, I must interrupt you for a moment. I must get this off my mind. I am deeply puzzled to understand just why time should be personified and come into our work. It is true, as he said, time knows all things; in fact, measures all things, but, by what law does he become a personality clothed in the form of a man?"

"Doctor, you remember, when I ran out to the country last summer for a short vacation, I took with me some books on Greek and Italian mythology. I was greatly interested in some of the mythological characters, especially Saturn. Now that we are *awakening* a new faculty, I find a new light falling upon the mythological science, for it is more a hidden science than a religion. There is no doubt about the christian religion having absorbed this concealed wisdom into its own hidden system. Therefore, I have already put it down as akin to gnosticism. I will briefly tell the story of Saturn.

"The most ancient divinities of the Greeks were of *heaven and earth*.

"You recollect, *Cronus* said that he originally was Saturn. Now, the god of *heaven* was *Coelus*, the father of *Saturn*. *Saturn* was also called *Uranus*, meaning heaven. *Terra* was the goddess of *earth*. Yet *Uranus* is named both son and husband of *Gaea*, the goddess of the *earth*.

"As the Lord over the kingdom of the world, Saturn assumes the name *Chronos*, signifying *time*. This now gives us a reason why our good guide assumed the name *Cronus*

the ripener, the finisher, therefore he is the offspring of Uranus.

"Jupiter, the son of Cronus, is named the father of gods and men. He usurped the kingdom of Saturn, his father, who fled to Italy, thus introducing the Greek mythology into Italy. Saturn was kindly received in Italy by its king, *Janus*, the son of *Apollo*, god of the *sun*. Who had two faces, one looking into the past and the other into the future. *Saturn* endowed *Janus* with extraordinary prudence, a knowledge of future events, and a perpetual remembrance of the past.

"The first ten words in the Bible reveal a clean-cut intent to imitate this Greek system, on the part of the christian enterprise.

" 'In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth' (Gen. 1:1).

"Both systems begin with heaven and earth, with the difference that, the ecclesiasts pretend that their God supersedes the Greek heaven and earth. In the ecclesiastic secret code:

"*Heaven* means ecclesiastical government.

"*Earth* means producing humanity.

"The name *Ecclesia* was plagiarized from the Greeks, being the name of the legislative body ruling ancient Athens centuries before the christian era.

"We know we have formed a contact with some living mentation which seems to be striving for revelation, or for human expression. If, as we previously agreed, our own conscious mentation is but an embodied extension of a universal intelligence, we are dealing with a living mentation, striving to reveal the secrets of systems which are hampering natural human progression on this earth.

"Cronus is the most logical agent it can reveal to help us. This great medium speaks to us through our own subjective mind, and that is our spirit, and a part of the great creative spirit."

"You are well advanced in this subject, Grub," said the Doctor. "You give me food for thought," and the Doctor left Grub to complete his record.

CHAPTER IV

"Grub, come in here. I have a problem for you," said Doctor Heim, as he led the way into the library. His face was serious and perplexed.

They seated themselves at the table and the doctor drew a writing pad and pencil toward him, as though going to write. Then he said:

"In the automatic writing you exhibited to me, I observed that you attempt to demonstrate four primary attributes of the creative process, naming them: the vibratory, the gaseous, the solid, and the fluid.

"This globular body you name the *electron*, out of which are born all the primary elements from which all material bodies are created—named in their order, these elements seem to be our well-known nitrogen, oxygen, carbon and hydrogen.

"These are gases which unite to form a primary electric unit, which may be named the basic molecule of matter, a whirling or spiral body.

"Now you say there is an intelligent, universal mentation, with which we may form an understanding contact, by which we tap a reservoir of potential wisdom, an all-pervading medium. I would like for you to explain your views regarding this contact."

"Well, Doctor," began Grub, "you have indeed put before me a mental task. I shrink from committing myself to some obscure theory which may not be substantiated by accepted scientific facts. I will, however, do my best.

"First, let us examine my waves. It goes without argument, that the globular electron contains the potential forces, as revealed by the waves, which start the creative process of constructing material bodies. Apparently the four waves, the vibratory, gaseous, solid and fluid, are released from the electron, and register the progressive steps in this process, which terminates in primary molecule. Matter cannot assume any other form or physical condition.

"I hold that the electron is the potential electric cell, and the spiral is the spent magnetic cell, and the elemental vibrations between the two reveal the creative process. This suggests an electric spirit surrounded by a magnetic body.

"The electron is the egg out of which are born:

"*Nitrogen*, the extreme of cold, which begets *oxygen*, heat, which begets *carbon*, dry, which begets *hydrogen*, moist. Thus it is seen that, nitrogen is the release of the mother principle, which is an essential part of every living structure having the power of reproduction. I believe the whole secret lies in nitrogen, expansive force—and that is life, which is transmitted from body to body, by contact, till the force is neutralized in the spiral cell. I believe the nitrogen atom symbolizes the moon principle in nature.

"We can diagram the creation of this molecule, and its development into a living cell, and prove that this life principle follows a cyclic process, and culminates in an organic image.

"Look at this diagram:



"You will observe that the same waves, which formed the spiral, have backed out of the spiral to form the organic cell. This being a reflection or image of the original electron—a ring instead of a globule.

"Nitrogen is the beginning and nitrogen is the ending, not in identical forms, but in principle.

"'I am the beginning and the end' (Rev. 21:6).

"I am again impressed with the belief, that, the wise promoters of the christian scheme were familiar with the gnostic philosophy, by many such expressions found in the Bible.

"Observe, the positive ends of the waves, in both directions, point toward the spiral. Clearly the waves from the original electron are positive, in relation to the centre, hence they are neutralized in the spiral. The reverse waves also

must be positive in their attitude. Now doubtless this process endows the spiral with magnetic polarity.

"We have in this primary act, the first suggestion of respiration. The mechanical principle of respiration is attraction and repulsion, and that applies to every act of nourishing the body.

"It is a fact that a magnetized body has the power to transmit its forces, without weakening its own body, proving that it is possessed of recuperative powers. This recuperation can only come to it through consecutive, positive waves, hence it is from the universal pabulum. If this were not true, the reaction would complete a fixed or crystallized body.

"One end of a magnet will produce a number of opposite poles distributed about it in harmonious union.

"This is the origin of the family group.

"Magnetic attraction and repulsion are not interfered with by the interposition of non-magnetic substances.

"All magnetized bodies have a positive and negative pole. It is upon this principle that we attract to us the elements of our nourishment, and repel the excrements.

"Oxygen is magnetic, hence, we may assume that the oxygen we derive from the atmosphere, by inhalation, may be the connecting link which magnetizes the cells of the medullary matter of our cerebro-spinal nervous system, which comes in direct contact with all the living tissues of the body.

"The brain-cells may be likened unto soap bubbles filled with oxygen, which are highly magnetic.

"All the other gases in the atmosphere are non-magnetic, therefore, we reject them by expiration. This is the excrement of respiration—carbon dioxide for example.

"There is a definite compensation in these acts, and we have, here, an excellent example. Our solid excrements become the fertilizers for the development of vegetation. The *carbon dioxide*, the excrement of respiration, becomes the breath of vegetation, being absorbed by the leaves.

"Thus the lower organic creations live off the excrements of the higher. Nevertheless, supplying the living substance for

the food of the higher, the earth being the axis of this compensating cycle.

"It is by this revolution that the evolution in organic life slowly climbs.

"Nitrogen is electric, having the power to break up and destroy magnetism, also to produce polarity, hence bodies are often polarized by lightning coming from the higher regions, demonstrating nitrogen as the original master power.

"The christian scheme betrays a gnostic understanding of these natural phenomenon, by similitude.

"'If any man come to me, and hate not his father and mother, and wife and children, and brethren and sisters, he cannot be my disciple' (Luke 14:26).

"Thus is the magnetic law, which binds the family together, broken up and depolarized by the cold, nitrogenous, godly influence of the greedy church.

"Another illustration of this nitrogeneous power to make or mend is in the fact that a magnet can awaken polarity in a body in contact by induction, without losing any of its own power. On the contrary, electric bodies have the power both to depolarize these bodies, or to surrender its own power to another body, without depleting its own electrical source.

"Thus, nature raises up living bodies to serve a purpose, then withdraws from them the life. This is the principle of death, applying to physical, organic bodies.

"The atmosphere around our planet is a shield to prevent the living creatures from being submerged by the external pabulum, which seeks every opportunity to reach the earth.

"Any electrified body, upon forming a contact with the earth, discharges its electricity into the earth, even seizing upon any object attached to the earth, as a vehicle of transmission. Then all electrical disturbance ceases in its own body. We observe an excellent example of this in the lightning striking the tree, leaving a spiral sear upon its body as the electric current passes into the earth.

"There is evidence that the earth attracts these ex-

ternal assaults, but is incapable of controlling the resultant elements until they are swallowed into its body. Moreover, the external force which drives these living streams into our atmosphere, is wholly indifferent to the results, hence: 'God is no respecter of persons' (Acts 10:34). Another suggestion that the ecclesia was familiar with the gnostic philosophy.

"But, there is a more practical reason for the attracting of these primary elements to the earth. A large volume of vegetation requires nitrogen for germination and growth. This is well demonstrated by the *legumens* with their deep, sinuous roots covered with *nitrogenous bacteria*, and their pods—beans, peas, etc.—elongated, and filled with their series of rounded bodies, or seeds, a *perfect living model of our nitrogenous wave*.

"Here we have an extraordinary example of the creation of living matter. The true life cells remain in darkness to show that life begins in darkness, and the first form of organic life seeks the surface and the light.

"All electrical disturbance seeks to annihilate itself in the earth, the greater spiral.

"The christian scheme symbolizes mankind by the producing earth, and the church as the heavenly source of life. We may see, by the foregoing, what a contemptible fraud this pretense is. A fabulous personification cannot possibly give the slightest natural power to an artificial, earthy organization of men, who pose as superior beings over the earthy, producing masses.

"Right here we have the positive evidence of duplicity. We may clearly follow and trace every motion of nature, and not one act even suggests a god of the character portrayed by the fabulous christian god. Whereas we may identify the natural forces and elements selected to represent the christian characters. Furthermore, we have many evidences that the christian system was borrowed from the Greek mythology, which was borrowed from nature. For instance, the original idea of the caduceus was drawn from the lightning entwining itself about the body of the tree.

"Another evidence that all on earth is not directly subject to the godly power, is seen in the fact that some substances conduct electricity while other substances are non-conductors.

"The first idea of the nature of electricity was, that it was an actual transfer of a substance called the 'electrical fluid.'

"Fluidity suggests the progressive flow of the whole body, therefore the modern theory is that the electric charge consists of a 'state of strain of the particles of an elastic medium,' pervading all space, and interposed between the particles of bodies. The discharge relieves the strain.

"Now, Doctor, I must apologize for my tedious lecture, but with this before us we may come near to determining the agent of contact between the human mind and the universal source of life, even though some of our conclusions may be far-fetched."

"Not necessarily," replied the Doctor. "I have followed your story closely: tension or strain well describes the electric accumulation which seeks discharge. These charges are caused by friction, pressure vibration, perhaps all coming under chemical action. Therefore other elements are involved. Without these arousing forces, electricity would remain dormant. Motion, then, *awakens* the life generating forces. After all, life is but the creative impulse seeking stability and rest in a material personality, a body where it may be protected from external irritations."

"It is astonishing how these things all seem to culminate in a revelation of the christian imitation. This very readily suggests the monastic privacy behind strong walls, to keep away from earthy contacts. These selfish, self-deified men pose as the refined godly forces," said Grub.

"A very apt suggestion," said the Doctor.

"I have observed that our trance state only exaggerates the senses of seeing and hearing; in fact, the physical senses seem to be in a state of suspense, which decidedly classes the trance as a magnetic state, even to suspending physical pain. Therefore our contact must occur in the field belong-

ing to these senses, and that is the field of light and sound vibrations. Moreover, seeing is much more acute in light than hearing, while hearing is decidedly more acute than the sense of seeing in darkness. Therefore there must be two mediums, to which these two senses adjust themselves."

"Exactly true," said Grub, "for you can carve the flesh from the body, while in the magnetic state, and no pain is experienced. This naturally deprives the physical body also of pleasure.

"Do you see what this reveals, Doctor? Our pains and pleasures are not physical but mental, revealing that the seat of all sensation is in the brain, hence: the physical body is but an instrument to express them.

"'The God of heaven revealeth the deep and secret things; he knoweth what is in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with him' (Dan. 2:22).

"Nitrogen is that God, and Christ is that light.

"'Ye heard the voice of the words, but saw no similitude' (Deut. 4:12).

"Now, Doctor, your differentiation of the mediums of seeing and hearing is a wonderful revelation.

"'God is the word' (John 1:1).

"'In him was life, and the life was the light of men' (John 1:4).

"Nitrogen is the medium of hearing—darkness.

"Oxygen is the medium of seeing—revelation.

"Christ declares:

"'I am the light of the world' (John 8:12).

"'I am the way, and the life; no one cometh unto the father, but by me' (John 14:6).

"Light and life are one.

"This is truly gnostic, for we may actually identify these natural elements, and know their chemical functions. You may now realize to what extent ecclesiasticism has deprived mankind of a knowledge of the simplest truths of nature."

"But, Grub, contact implies a conjunction of two bodies," said the Doctor.

"Quite right," admitted Grub. "Chemical entities, mentation is of a chemical nature. It is not difficult to determine the character of these chemical atoms, and a reason for their resultant effects.

"We have previously agreed that the potential electron is globular, and the first magnetized molecule is spiral. The globule, or electron, represents the potential or kinetic energy to be released. The spiral represents the magnetic power of attraction. Motion begets heat, and rapid oxygenation begets light. This defines oxygen as the revealing power, the revelation of the word on earth, the spiral representing the earth.

"'Christ manifests the word of God' (Rev. 19:13). Therefore oxygen is the revealing agent for the manifestation of both seeing and hearing. Moreover, oxygen is life.

"Jesus declares: 'I and my father are one' (John 10:30).

"Jesus symbolizes the conversion of chemical light into intelligence.

"Now, we may draw some marvelous deductions. Vision is primarily an external contact with light. While hearing is internally recorded. This is revealed by the spiral *cochlea* of the ear for the transmission of sound vibrations to the receptive brain centres to be interpreted into intelligent sounds, and formed into words.

"The same applies to the globular form of the eye-ball. ✕

"The outer contact is physical, and the inner contact is mental. We cannot differentiate between these contacts, because they are parts of one act. The proof of this is in the fact that, if the brain be injured to prevent the functions of interpreting centres, understanding ceases.

"The eye absorbs the globules or electrons and the ear the spiral molecules, through the external sense organs. Like adjust itself to like in the physical receiving organs, globule to globe, and spiral to spiral. These primitive forms unite in the brain centres to complete what? The atmosphere about the microcosmic worlds, the material organic cells awaiting to receive the 'holy ghost,' respiration. The brain is the storehouse of universal wisdom to be interpreted into living struc-

tures. * All revelation is material and physical when translated into knowledge, hence, 'thoughts are things'."

"What evidence have we that these atomic forms exist in a state to perfect such material contacts," asked the Doctor.

"Well, this brings us to a realization that astronomy, chemistry and physiology are branches of a single science. It is astronomical processes which prepare out atmospheric pabulum. Shall I attempt to explain this?" said Grub.

"Certainly; let us couple up the parts while the subject is fresh in our minds," responded the Doctor.

"It is very simple," began Grub. "The hot sun is the source of positive energy, sent to the earth to *awaken* physical, organic being.

"The sun also sends the same radiations to the moon, a reflective body. The warm wave is converted into a cold wave, and is reflected to the atmosphere of the earth, assuming the form of a circle. The direct rays, from the sun to the earth, are converted into spirals, in the atmosphere. Thus a union of these two waves is prevented. This explains why our atmosphere is a mechanical mixture instead of a chemical compound. It also reveals the principles which beget in the planet, axial and orbital motion.

! \ "It is well agreed in astronomical research, that the moon was cast off the side of the earth, and remains a satellite body, as a helpmeet to the earth.

!!! "In the ecclesiastical similitude, this figures the taking from the side of the Adam a rib which God made a woman, as a helpmeet to Adam. The crescent moon suggested this idea.

"This also suggested symbolizing producing mankind as the earth. The moon becomes helpmeet to the earth.

"Very clearly we now understand why the moon is chosen to represent the church, with Christ, light, as its head.

"In physiology this makes the heart the seat of physical action, and the brain as the seat of meditation and mentation. God and Christ unite in the earth, and God rules through the Christ principle.

"'God was manifest in the flesh' (1 Tim. 3:16).

"Is this the extent of your chemical action?" asked the Doctor.

"Well, I must here introduce a theory of my own," replied Grub, "and you will be astonished that this will return us again to our original beginning of this whole subject. You remember that, while we had the contents of the blue glass tube, and the water in our drinking jar, under discussion, we discovered the water was saturated with *hydrogen sulphide*—formula $\text{SH}^2 = 34$.

"Now, *hydrogen sulphide* burns with a blue flame and forms water— $\text{OH}^2 = 18$.

"I have concluded, in my own deductions, that the moon was cast off the side of the earth while yet in its primitive state. Sulphur was one of the earliest chemical elements formed. The original formation was of the character of sulphur, and the side of this planet away from the sun was a body of crystallized hydrogen sulphide. The casting off of this body was the beginning of axial motion on the part of the earth, and orbital motion of both earth and moon.

"When crystallized *hydrogen sulphide* is super-heated, it emits blue flames and forms water— $\text{OH}^2 = 18$. It is at once seen, that the residue, 16, is oxygen. Thus it seems possible that the atom of oxygen found in our atmosphere, also is released by the reflected influence of the moon, and we know that, potentially, oxygen carries the undeveloped carbon wave and hydrogen spiral.

"In the christian scheme, it is the church which brings Christ to the earthy people.

"The church does not intend that the people shall be blessed by the direct sunlight, but the sunlight censored by the moon. This fully explains the reason for the world being cast into the darkness of ignorance for a thousand years, that the church might censor education and measure knowledge.

"*Darkness* means misery, oppression, ignorance.

"*Light* means joy, prosperity, knowledge.

"They seek credit for bringing light to the world, mak-

h2!
h2!

ing human intelligence an artificial thing, to be measured out to mankind. *Moon*, in the ecclesiastic code, means measurer.

"The natural, normal, gnostic wisdom is not a gift, it is a part of the living process. No superstitions, religious fanaticism attaches to it. Religion is an artifice, imposed upon ignorance, to bind the people in slavery.

"That which nature intends we shall have, we must assimilate as our normal nourishment, each his due proportion, or fall short of nature's purposes, and suffer the consequences. This we call disease.

"If we are deprived of the faculty of interpretation by traditional education, we develop imperfectly and fail to fulfill the mission for which we are created, and that mission is to cultivate wisdom to be absorbed into the universal pabulum, an abstract and formless entity. All systems in nature are cultivated for the fruits they bear, and the character of that fruit may not be changed by artifice with impunity."

"Wait a moment, Grub," said the Doctor. "You are wandering too far away from the main issue. Where did you get all this? It is not to be found in our textbooks."

"I suggest, Doctor, that we adjourn this sitting until I may get together my automatic writings and drawings to demonstrate my lecture," said Grub.

"Very good, Grub, we will take it up tomorrow morning," replied the Doctor. "But let us keep well in mind the suggestion that spiritual forms are ever present in the atmosphere, or at least in the universal pabulum, seeking to reveal themselves in material bodies, or to materialize through embodied mentation."

CHAPTER V

On the following morning Grub took from his own private cabinet his writings and drawings, and placed them in order upon the table. Soon thereafter the Doctor entered.

"There it is, Doctor. Automatic writings and drawings of universal subjects. I can demonstrate by these, that mankind has been wilfully and premeditatedly deprived of the exercise of its greatest natural endowment, universal mental contact, and thought in common.

"Originally this was due to a desire to confiscate this contact with traditional wisdom, on the part of selfish, designing men, that the gift might be offered as a bribe to draw the people into a shielding organization called the christian church.

"They desired to usurp the power and authority to debase the lower classes of men in ignorance and oppression, as a means of controlling the world. But, because of a gross misuse of these powers, and the dissolute lives they lived, they failed, themselves, to perfect the universal contact, and dropped into a beastly earthy, imbecilic state, and plunged the greater humanity into abject ignorance, to conceal the truth, and escape the curse of mankind.

"Your enthusiasm amazes me, Grub," exclaimed the Doctor. "You talk like a veteran philosopher. Whatever started you on this strange, but deeply interesting, subject?"

"Doctor, you said the substance of my work may not be found in our text books. If there is any logic, or new scientific revelations in it, that proves my theory of the suppression of gnosticism. It is true, only by accident may any book referring to this subject in a broad and instructive way, be found exposed for public reading in public libraries. For some unaccountable reason, such works are slipped into secret places where only select readers may have access to them. In our college library I came upon a book entitled 'The Resurrection.' It purported to be an inspired volume, reviving the orig-

inal gnostic wisdom. You know it is an historical fact, that it required five hundred years for the ecclesiasts to suppress gnosticism. The fact that a thousand years of ignorance (486 to 1495) followed, is ample evidence of the intent and purpose of this blasphemous thing. To the shame of the kings and rulers of the nations, they were as ignorant as their own subjects, being able neither to read nor write.

"This condition wholly eradicated the possibility of human contact with universal mentation, the original intent of nature. The ecclesiastical usurpers had a holy fear of a thought in common, which would expose their fraud upon cultivated credulity. Mental training was wholly suppressed, and mankind was subjected to physical training, and cruel restraints and discipline, and named the earthy producing masses, and enslaved to the production of carnal and material things for the use and aggrandizement of the nonproducing, ruling classes, with the visible results about us. Crime, imbecility, and poverty, have been well organized 'for the fruits they yield.'

"The book, 'The Resurrection,' gave to me an inspiration which I had never had before, with extraordinary results."

"Well, Grub, there will be greater glory in restoring human contact with the gnostic wisdom, than there was in the unmerciful work of destroying it. I am now convinced of the truth that ecclesiasticism did destroy gnosticism, and attempt to usurp its wisdom. When *awakened*, humanity will curse the ecclesiasts from the face of the earth." And the Doctor betrayed unusual emotion.

"You used a most significant word, Doctor, 'usurp.' I do not know if I have told you that usurpation was the origin of the christian church, as proven by the ecclesiastic code.

"*Jacob* means to supplant, to usurp by force or trickery.

"*Jacob* named the church *Bethel* (Gen. 28).

"*Bethel* means the house of God.

"*God* named Jacob *Israel*.

"*Israel* is the church of Christ.

"Now, Doctor, we may settle this problem for good and

all. Here is the best authority in the world on the origin and meaning of biblical words and names.

"The analysis of the word *Israel* is a revelation.

"*Is* means the light—*ra* means the sun—*el* means first cause.

"The light of the sun is the first cause of all. Christ declares:

"‘I am the light of the world’ (John 8:12).”

"Must we conclude, then, that our atmosphere contains, or rather is the medium, of our contact, or merger?" asked the Doctor.

"Yes, this is the coming of the *holy ghost*, which they admit is the *breath, respiration*. We breathe nitrogen and oxygen from our atmosphere, and they perfect our brain cells, making of them little planets, by giving them an atmosphere to breathe.

"The living products of our planet reflect the universal wisdom, the forms being created in the universal mentation before they are revealed in material bodies.

"‘And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew’ (Gen. 2:5).

"The same process applies to organic bodies; the physical cells are suggested in the mind before they are made material cells in the body. The digestive process forms the material body, and the mind surrounds it with an atmosphere, giving it a spiritual body.

"‘There is a natural body and there is a spiritual body’ (1 Cor. 15:44).

"With the coming of the atmosphere, the holy ghost becomes the revealing power, and light means life.

"‘In him was life; and the life was the light of men’ (John 1:4).

"We know the nitrogen wave carries potentially, within itself, the oxygen wave.

"The atmosphere consists of nitrogen and oxygen, therefore, the God principle is in the nitrogen of our atmosphere, and the Christ principle is in the oxygen.

"When these are inhaled into our system the God takes his seat in heaven, the brain, and Christ passes into the earth, the body, to give life and light to the living tissues.

"By concentration we create a vacuum, and flood our brains with the all-wise nitrogen atoms, which cast into the mind the universal light which reveals all. We may select from it that which we desire, to assimilate as mental food, independent of the bodily process, as the desire of the body selects the material food from a miscellaneous mass, for its nourishment. This is the law of selectivity.

"Thus the spiritual body selects its own nourishment, and, according to the law of nature, gives in exchange an excrement for the nourishment of the material body, and that excrement is the light and life in oxygen.

"This planet is but the excrement of some greater body, and we are but living cells belonging to it as a part of its living tissues.

"An analysis of our whole body reveals every secret of the greater, or microcosmic body.

"Now, if this be true, the atomic planets which our primary elements construct, know all, up to the limit of their absorption, and they have the propogating power to multiply themselves to absorb endless wisdom, as the magnet has the power to attract and establish about itself multiple similar bodies.

"The whole process is in attraction and repulsion, inspiration and expiration, assimilation and elimination, mental as well as physical.

"In our astronomical similitude, the brain is the moon of our microcosm, and it is a receiving and reflecting body, receiving light radiated from all the other illuminated bodies in the same system, and perhaps other systems. This potential light is our mental food, sent into our brain for digestion, and then to be distributed through the nervous system, ramifying our whole body, to give light and life to the cells, that they may intelligently perform their normal functions.

"While concentrating, our physical demand for light is

temporarily suspended, in order to appropriate larger quantities of oxygen for mental purposes. Again we may observe nature striving to enlighten us by example. The moon, which reflects to our atmosphere our planetary wisdom, alternates between light and darkness, as though to permit this planet to recuperate from a period of absorption, and to assimilate the elements drawn from the influences of the moonlight.

"Hence, we may conclude there is a cold potential light, and a warm active light, 'the one to rule by night and the other to rule by day.' These are the greater light and the lesser light of Genesis 1:16.

"The fact that God placed these fixed lights in heaven, proves they are the sun and moon, which, in the code, symbolize the civil government and the church. With producing mankind as the earth.

"What is the chemical process involved in this transfusion of an excess of nitrogen?" asked the Doctor.

"It is a normal, chemical process, and a creative operation," replied Grub. "Let us examine the new combinations formed.

"You, doubtless, have observed that carbon and hydrogen seem to take minor parts in this mental process. Nevertheless, they are absolutely essential to complete the cyclic process, and they are the foundation elements in material structures. Therefore, in the chemical processes we should find concealed the primary structural elements.

"We have seen that the original series of waves cannot regurgitate back through each other, each atom having its own specific wave differing from the others.



"Therefore combinations are in like manner progressive. See what follows:

"Oxygen 16 + carbon 12 = silicon 28.

"Nitrogen 14 + oxygen 16 + hydrogen 1 = phosphorous 31.

"Nitrogen 14 + oxygen 16 + carbon 12 + hydrogen 1 = 43, the primary cell which is the beginning of both vegetable and animal life.

"Thus the very primary formations are the logical and essential elements for the construction of organic beings.

"It is a self-evident truth, that some mental power pre-determines the form before the physical body is created. Otherwise the formation of bodies would be haphazard.

"This gnostic idea of images suggested to the ecclesiasts the idea of the spiritual body. Moreover this reveals the necessity for making the Adam, a natural body, precede Adam the spiritual (1 Cor. 15:46).

"'The first man is of the earth, earthy; the scond man the Lord from heaven'—the body and spirit.

"An understanding of these mysteries is the *awakening* of the sixth sense."

"Grub," said the Doctor, "this has been a most edifying and entertaining lecture. Let us now rest and digest it," to which Grub assented.

CHAPTER VI

"Doctor," said Grub, "I have outlined a lesson which will be a guide for our examination of Biblical similitudes. I am quite sure you will approve of the theory involved, and that you will feel no regret that you forego your proposed return to London."

"I am pleased to listen, Grub," said the Doctor, and Grub began his lecture.

"Gnosticism is the foundation of all human knowledge. *Gnosis* means to *know*.

"All human systems must be based upon the original wisdom taught by developing nature, and brought down through the ages by tradition.

"Mythology is the personification of natural causes and effects, and a grateful acknowledgment of heroic acts of men.

"Ecclesiasticism is a purposeful concealment of the gnostic wisdom, and the wilful plagiarization of the principles of the leading previous religions, for selfish ends.

"The christian church is but a shield for ecclesiastic intrigues and duplicity.

"Expanding humanity is the burden bearer, and producer, under the intolerant, fanatical christian despotism.

"We may begin with the heaven as planetary-worship, with its many gods. This was succeeded by Egyptian sun-worship, with the Pharaoh as the sun-king—the earthy vicar.

"With the discovery of fire came fire-worship, with the patriarch as father and high priest.

"Abraham came out of *ur*, fire.

"I must comment here:

"'Call no man your father upon the earth' (Matt. 23:9).

"Yet we read:

"'Abraham who is the father of us all' (Rom. 4:16)

"The name Abraham means the father of a multitude.

"This might appear to be a contradiction, but it is an

exposure, for an analysis reveals *Ab* = father, *ra* = high, *ham* = hot.

"The high hot father. The sun—the heat of the sun.

"The same applies to 'David, the father of Jesus Christ' (Matt. 1:1).

"David means carnal love.

"Is there no evidence of fraud in this contradictory tommy-rot? These characters, like Jesus Christ, are preached literally to the ignorant masses.

"Gnosticism, by thought and reason, deified wisdom and knowledge, as a reflective form of the worship of nature.

"Mythology deifies its heroes into hero-worship.

"Ecclesiasticism plagiarized all these into man-worship, concealed in symbolisms, personifications, and mystery, known only to the chosen few.

"'But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery' (1 Cor. 2:7).

"Jesus said unto his disciples:

"'It is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them (the people) it is not given.

"'For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance; but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath' (Matt. 13:11, 12).

"'And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests' (Exodus 19:6).

"'That the living may know that the most high (the head of the ecclesia) ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will' (Dan. 4:17).

"'The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ' (Rev. 11:15).

"Now, Doctor, we know, beyond any necessity for dispute, that this christian God and Lord, and this Christ, are but figurative things, although preached literally, therefore this impudent attitude of ecclesiasticism is but a part of a well defined assault upon the greater humanity, and its natural rights to rule, guide and regulate itself through its self-chosen governments.

"When the United States was founded, a weak attempt was made to overcome this horrid usurpative enemy of men, which already held the *temporal power* over European nations. But, this land was quickly filled with its trained militant mobs, drawn from other nations, the refuse of civilized Europe, and the secret agencies of the church to guide them.

"The unqualified voting franchise was turned against those who desired to build here a model nation.

"Behold the result: crime, imbecility, ignorance, selfishness, greed, hatred, and contempt for all that is just, right and decent, are running amuck in the land, and millions are mentally and physically starving. Yet we dare criticize other nations.

"And this is *mystery-worship*.

"The better combination is:

"Ignorance, superstition, and fear.

"The true mystery is the gnostic revelation. We shall uncover in our analysis of the scientific research into astronomy, chemistry and physiology, as expounded by the traditional, gnostic philosophy.

"This will be our revelation.

"The human body is a reflection of our planetary system.

"Tradition rests wholly upon the past, else we might extend the likeness into the universal system. The living body amazingly reveals the planetary body with its parts and their functions.

"In the study of anatomy, for our purpose in this comparison, we need only examine three principles, the *sun*, the *moon* and the *earth*.

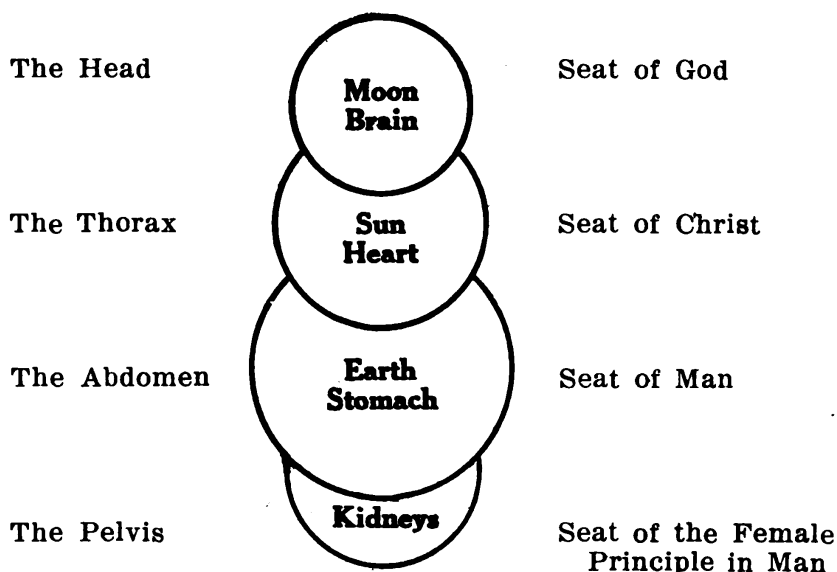
"These three planetary bodies are most conspicuous in the ecclesiastic similitudes.

"The *sun*, radiating and objective.

"The *moon*, mediating and reflective.

"The *earth*, a receptive body and subjective.

"These are the principal elements in the ecclesiastical exploitation. We shall compare these with centres of activities in the human body. It is truly a revelation.



“Woman is always belittled in the Bible.

“‘Who can find a virtuous woman?’ (Prov. 31:10).

“Every living woman should resent such aspersions.

“‘I find more bitter than death the woman, whose heart is snares and nets, whoso pleaseth God shall escape from her; but the sinner shall be taken by her’ (Ecc. 7:26).

“Truly, this makes woman a hellish snare for men.

“Even Jesus repudiated his own alleged mother.

“‘Jesus saith unto her (his mother), woman, what have I to do with thee’ (John 2:4).

“‘I suffer not a woman to teach nor to usurp authority over man, but to be in silence’ (1 Tim. 2:12).

“Now, why did the churches close their eyes to this, in the United States, and enfranchise women to vote, and do all that men do? For the simple reason that the woman’s vote has been subsidized. They have taken mean advantage of the very weaknesses they have condemned in women. Women vote practically as a body or unit.

“Now, any woman who will permit a foul minded preacher or greasy, fat priest to smear over her, and take liberties with

her person, is unfit to associate with decent, self-respecting people.

"The 'confessional' is the most criminal thing existing in the churches. It gives secret opportunity for priestly intrigues, and helps to conceal endless acts which the laws forbid. There is not one confessional priest who is not legally party to endless crimes through a guilty knowledge, obtained through the confessional, from superstitious offenders. No matter how trivial, or how great, what legal authority has the priest to try and acquit those who have secretly violated the law?

"We will now continue with our gnostic work.

"Again referring to the diagram:

"In the human anatomy, each of the centres reveals a remarkable similarity with the planetary principles, each of the central active organs having its moon as represented by a secondary organ acting in the same associated capacity as the moon, measuring and regulating the functions.

"The *cerebellum*, the *fore-brain*, seat of mentation.

"The *heart—lungs*, seat of respiration.

"The *stomach—liver*, seat of digestion.

"The *kidneys—bladder*, seat of elimination.

"This is an excellent internal reflection of planetary operations, revealing that the ecclesiasts recognized this moon principle as the regulating power, else they would not have coded the moon as 'the measurer.'

"The external man is earthy and active.

"The *head* with its face and teeth.

"The *thorax* with its arms and hands.

"The *abdomen* and pelvis, with legs and feet.

"The legs and feet lead to the game.

"The arms and hands seize and hold it.

"The face censors it and the teeth masticate it.

"It is seen this process precedes digestion and assimilation, which are internal operations. Hence the external man is the go-getter, or producer, in so far as the procuring of food is concerned.

"Gnostic revelation clearly defines these agents as the essential structures of the physical man, as differentiated from the organic man—internal.

"Flesh, muscle, bone and marrow.

"As a remarkable truth, each of these material structures is accompanied by its moon.

"The *flesh* the cerebro-spinal nervous system.

"The *muscles* the sympathetic nervous system.

"The *bone*, the marrow.

"It must be observed that the union of the male and female principle in man is always present when man is named. The bone symbolizes the man.

"'God created man in his own image, male and female created he them' (Gen. 1:27). This is another evidence of plagiarism from the gnostic wisdom.

"The blood and lymph form another pair, permeating the whole system by their distributive functions.

"These are the two rivers between which is *Mesopotamia*, meaning abundance.

"The whole process may be summed up in three words: thought, speech and action.

"The seat of thought is in the head.

"The seat of speech is in the thorax.

"The seat of action is in the abdomen.

"These are primarily actuated by the necessity for nourishment.

"Breath, bread and fluid.

"We may readily find the source of all our nourishment.

"Breath from the atmosphere.

"Bread from the earth.

"Fluid from the waters.

"The digestion of these products is the preparation, analysis, and interpretation of elements to be distributed and assimilated for the construction and maintenance of the essential tissues of the physical man.

"The blood and the lymph are the distributing agents, their visible systems being the physical highways for such distribu-

tion, the white corpuscles for the flesh, and the red corpuscles for the muscles.

"Both of these tissues make deposits in the bones, as the whole body deposits its excrements upon the surface of the earth, to fertilize the soil as food for vegetation, on the theory that every system receives as its nourishment the excrements of the next higher system.

"This is the basis for the doctrine of the resurrection of the human body, after rotting in the grave.

"'So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption. It is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory.

"'It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body and there is a spiritual body' (1 Cor. 15).

"This has reference to the dead repulsive deposits of the excrements of living bodies. They pass through a chemical process which again associates the elements in the cycle of living matter. Physical nature lives by this rejuvenating process. The excrements of every system is but the tribute paid to the system which produces and nourishes it.

"The mot contemptible attitude toward humanity assumed by the church is, that all who will not pay tribute to it, and become assimilated into its body, must be treated as an excrement, to be cast into a fiery furnace, as chaff and tares. Fifty millions of people have been thus sacrificed.

"'The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked.

"'The tares, and all things that offend are cast into the furnace and burned' (Matt. 13).

"This is a devilish thing, Doctor. This murderous pretender presumes to destroy all things it cannot control.

"'The harvest is the end of the world' (Matt. 13:39).

"This is the time of burning.

"Back in the middle centuries, a time was set for the 'end of the world,' and preparations were made to execute this damnable thing. Even public documents made provision for

this end, such was the state of ignorance into which all the people had been trained. This finally culminated in that awful carnage of humanity, under the murderous inquisition, in which fifty millions of innocent lives were sacrificed to the fanatical church, the greater number being burned as 'chaff' and 'tares.'

"This was deliberately conceived, preached and executed by insane fools who attempted to fulfill these murderous suggestions in the Bible.

"The ecclesiasts knew the gnostic truth, that this earth, itself, in its own raw state, was an excrement from some other planetary body, sown in corruption, and its living products are the glorious resurrection of newly created living bodies, with mankind as the crowning glory. The separation of human beings, capable of assimilating the traditional gnostic wisdom, from natural contacts, by crushing them down into abject ignorance, was a crime against nature and man. The false-pretense of education, to conceal this crime, is compounding the original felony. The men who sit in high places, posing as gods, or vicars of gods, know the truth, therefore, they are the meanest criminals this earth ever produced.

"The whole creative process demands a protected unit system. The undeniable evidence of this is glaringly revealed by the individual cells of all living matter.

"Ecclesiasticism struggles to crush the greater humanity into a plastic mass, to be ruled and controlled by a rigid, unyielding discipline, which destroys independent freedom, and personal liberty intended by nature. All nature lives by alternating expansion and contraction, a respiration which carries to each individual unit cell its due portion of an equalized distribution of life-giving energy. Man should be cultivated by the same process.

"Unnatural restraint angers all nature, and drives mankind mad.

"'The law maketh wrath; for where no law is there is no transgression' (Rom. 4:15).

"Is this why this nation is smothered under a blanket of

criminal laws? So many that not even the federal government can enumerate them? Never pausing to consider that each new law imposes a greater burden upon the people, and adds a new class of criminals to the appalling list.

"This creation of evil and crime is a definite part of a scheme to legislate all men into crime.

" 'Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law; that every mouth may be stopped and all the world may become guilty' (Rom. 3:19).

"Free speech must be throttled, and all men must be made criminals, that the influence of the church may become a bribe to draw the people into the confessional for secret forgiveness for a price. The confessional usurps the prerogatives of the law.

"The original intent of nature was to culminate a perfected humanity, with a thought in common, and so well poised as individual cells, which could not aspire to depart from their own orbits, which gave them the freedom to which they were entitled by their functions, that conflict could not arise in the body. The human body itself is witness to this great truth.

"Ecclesiasticism conceived the idea of so harassing mankind by laws, that a promise of relief would drive all men into the church.

" 'Christ is the end of the law' (Rom. 10:4).

" 'The law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ' (Gal. 3:24).

"Christ is the catholic church, with its confessional.

"This idea of the power of the law ending at the church door was actually made a fact in English law by the law called the 'benefit of clergy.' One under the protection of the church, even though guilty of the foulest crimes, was defended by his priest. By reading the 'neck verse,' the first verse of the 51st Psalm, he was branded in the hand and released to the church. Thus men became branded slaves of the church. It was a simple matter for one bent on crime

to commit this simple 'neck verse' to memory in advance of the crime. Upon being released the criminal confessed his crime, paid his tribute, and was made whole by forgiveness by the priest.

"Now, Doctor, I have a shock for you.

"The endless criminal laws are bringing humanity in to be finger-printed, which was invented after the 'benefit of clergy' which branded its victims.

"Right now, strong pressure is being brought to fingerprint whole communities, the most outrageous insult to a nation of people ever conceived by dirty skunks gone mad with power.

"Read this and blush, or curse, or both. It is a church proposition to brand the nation.

"'And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads;

"'And that no man might buy or sell, save he that hath the mark' (Rev. 13:16, 17)."

"My God! Grub, stop!" And the Doctor clinched his hands and passed out of the room to give vent to his suppressed emotions.

The suggestion of placing all the decent, self-respecting people on a par with registered criminals was the final stroke, he afterwards told Grub. It put murder in his own heart at a single stroke. That which touched the flesh of man without his consent, was an assault upon "God manifested in the flesh."

"What has become of true manhood?" exclaimed the agitated Doctor.

"You may extend that also to what man puts inside of himself" said Grub to the Doctor.

"'Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink' (Col. 2:16).

"I have one more demonstration, Doctor, before we lay aside this subject. It demonstrates the earthy man, the skeleton, as absolutely essential to the support, protection and

integrity of the body. It is at once guardian and protector of the whole man.

“The skull protects the brain.

“The spinal column protects the spinal cord and nerves.

“The ribs and other thoracic bones protect the heart and lungs.

“The long bones of the limbs especially are servants of the body.

“The fingers and toes have their special functions.

“Again we observe the inevitable control by our consecutive waves en masse.

“Flesh, muscles, bones and marrow — Shem, Japheth, Ham.

“Ham caught old Noah drunk and found him naked. For this, Ham was made a servant to the flesh and muscles, carrying all the burdens of the body. Ham is *Canaan*, meaning merchandising and trading, which carry all the burdens of civil exchanges.”

CHAPTER VII

"Grub, we must get away from that christian stuff for a while. It is the most irritating subject I ever encountered. Suppose we travel a bit for a change. I'd like to wander about a while with our old pal Cronus," and the Doctor looked smilingly at Grub.

"That suits me exactly," replied Grub, cheerfully.

They again sat concentrated, hand in hand, anticipating a visit to London.

"Ah! here we are, Grub, but where is Cronus?" exclaimed the Doctor.

"Johnnie on the spot," answered Cronus, as he bobbed up. "You can't escape time, sleeping or waking, he is your most faithful companion."

"That suggests a question," said the Doctor. "Why is the name John Bull applied to the English nation?"

"Well, there is no particular merit in the name," replied Cronus. "It is nothing more than a satire, originating in a story called the 'History of John Bull,' written by Dr. Arbuthnot, but erroneously credited to Swift. The French nation, in this same work, is personified as *Lewis Baboon*; and the Dutch as *Nicholas Frog*. That is why we call a Dutchman a 'Frog,' a Frenchman a 'Monkey' and an Englishman a 'Bull,' and it isn't so far wrong at that.

"In this connection I might as well give you a lesson on the name John, for sooner or later this name will arise again. The *h* in this name is a remnant of its ancient form *Johannes*, or *Johan*, which, in the ecclesiastical code, signifies magnanimity.

"Jo = increased, hanan = mercy. The name was first contracted to *Johan*, meaning God's gift. The custom of abbreviating this to *Jno* is very ancient. The name was alternately written *Jhon* and *John*, the *h* frequently assuming the form of *n*. *Jhon* contracted into *Jho*, the letter *h* changed to *n* became *Jno*.

"The name John is associated with many important human things. John foretold the coming of Jesus Christ, but this God was not powerful enough to keep John's head on his shoulders. John is the surname of Barleycorn, a great friend to humanity.

"But, the meanest use to which the name was ever put, is to fake evidence to pad weak places in criminal prosecutions.

" 'John Doe' and his pal 'Richard Roe' are well-known fictitious witnesses in cases too weak to hold water. *Magna Charta* demanded two witnesses to justify indictment, and since the reign of Edward III (1327) the fictitious names, 'John Doe' and 'Richard Roe' are put into writs as pretended witnesses, to comply with the law requiring two witnesses to convict. The same privilege is not granted the defendant in modern usage.

"But, have you spiritual travelers decided upon any particular place or object you would prefer to visit?" and Cronus beamed kindly upon them.

"What about the tower, Grub?" asked the Doctor.

"That suits me, but while we are here in view of it, couldn't we have a little lecture on the old bridge?" replied Grub.

"Sure. I'm glad you mentioned it. Give us a brief sketch of this world-renowned bridge, 'London Bridge'," said the Doctor.

"The word bridge has long been a popular word. The polite term is *pontoon*, which means way or path over some treacherous chasm; hence Jesus says: 'I am the way' (Jno. 14:6) and the pope of Rome, as the vicar of Christ, is called the *pontiff*—meaning the only way a man may tumble into hell, or burglarize heaven. The brief story of 'London Bridge' is:

"The first bridge—978.

"The second bridge—1014. Partly burned in 1136.

"The late old bridge was commenced about 1176, by Peter Colechurch, and completed in 1209, with houses on each side,

connected together by large arches of timber which crossed the street. July, 1212, a fire at the southward end attracted large crowds upon the bridge. The north end caught fire, preventing their escape; three thousand persons were either killed, burned or drowned.

"The bridge restored in 1300, again was destroyed by fire in 1471, also in 1632, and September, 1725.

"In 1756 all the houses were pulled down.

"Waterworks begun 1582, destroyed by fire 1774.

"The toll was discontinued March 27, 1782.

"In 1822, John Rennie and his two sons, John and George, contracted to build the great bridge. The first pile was driven in 1824, March 15. The first stone was laid by the lord mayor, Alderman Garratt, June 15, 1825.

"The bridge opened by William IV and his queen, August 1, 1831. It cost 506,000 £, about \$2,500,000.

"On March 17, 1859, there passed over London Bridge 20,498 vehicles (4,483 were cabs and 4,286 were omnibuses), and 167,910 persons (107,074 on foot, 60,836 in vehicles)."

"Some bridge!" exclaimed Grub. "I wonder how many trillions have passed over it since."

"Now, Cronus, that was surely interesting. Let us see 'London Tower'," said the Doctor.

"Fortunately you are not hampered by time or distance, so here we are," said Cronus. "We will start at the very beginning of the history of the Tower, which will expand as we discuss, and cuss, the bloody place. England records her history in blood and cruelty, having graduated under the tutelage of the popes of Rome."

They were viewing the great homely pile from a vantage point. It resembled a gnarled, old witch, glowering down upon them. Cronus now began his lecture,

"There are conflicting stories about the development of 'London Tower.' Anciently, it was a royal palace, consisting of no more than what is now called the white tower, which was designed by William the Conqueror, 1076. Work upon its erection began 1078, and was completed, by his son Wil-

liam Rufus, who, in 1098, surrounded it with walls, and a broad, deep ditch. King Edward III, 1327, built the church. In 1638 the white tower was rebuilt; and after the restoration of King Charles II, it was thoroughly repaired, and a great number of additional buildings made to it.

"It is not interesting to view the whole interiors. Here are the armory and jewel buildings, both interesting and instructive; also the museum.

"Doubtless you are interested in the gruesome history of the horrid prison portions. The villainous, political intrigues of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries in England shamelessly sacrificed the best blood of the nation. Not alone by pretended legal executions but by the most atrocious, cold-blooded murders. The stones of this structure are saturated with innocent blood. Such a crime was the persecution and execution of Sir Walter Raleigh, a perfectly innocent victim of hellish hate and intrigue.

"Ah! here is something interesting," and Cronus paused and drew their attention to a large bronze plate set into the wall, on which was inscribed in old English:

"Foundation of the Tower

"The Tower of London was builded by Belinus Magnus, of whose name the haven (Billings Gate, the great fish market of London) continueth the memorye to this daye; but Lydgate, the monk, ascribes it to Julius Caesar. Howsoever that be, true it is that William Redd walled it round about what time he layed the foundation of Westminster Halle'."

Now they passed on, until Cronus again paused.

"Now we are standing in the identical cell occupied by Sir Walter Raleigh. Would you like to hold a limited interview with him?"

"We surely would," exclaimed the Doctor in eager surprise.

"You are now in the presence of Sir Walter Raleigh. In a moment his image will become clearer. His spirit, which is now submerged in the great universal mind, may be re-

called to this cell, which held it prisoner for fourteen years, as long as this stone body remains standing."

"Ah! yes, from my beloved America; my Virginia, perhaps," was Sir Walter's cordial greeting.

"I expected to see you without a head, my dear Sir Walter," said the Doctor.

"No, not yet. I have been tried, convicted, and condemned, but I am hopeful of prolonging my life for a while. I am negotiating with my royal sovereign (James I, crowned July 25, 1603) to make one more journey into America in search for gold. I presume our good Cronus has advised you that this is now the year 1603. I must leave to his discretion whether or not you shall be advised of circumstances subsequent to that date. The truth that you now confront me reveals the wonderful truth that you have formed a contact with the greater mind, while your bodies yet breathe, else we could not be visible to each other. It is your own living state which reassembles images of previous forms; such mediumship is now extremely rare. Through your presence I am granted a return to conscious being. I am most glad to have greeted you."

"Sir Walter, I am deeply interested in what you have just said. May I ask what is your mental state when you are not thus reunited to mortal beings?" said the Doctor.

"It is very simple," replied Sir Walter. "Utter submersion, an unconscious state. You become the medium through which I temporarily become a conscious entity, sensing and visioning forms and conditions with which I was familiar in life. Your own contact with universal consciousness is the medium, this being made possible by your own living bodily contact. And now I must leave you," and the apparition disappeared.

The Doctor and Grub looked at each other in alarm. It came near to recalling them from their waking trance, but Cronus brought them back with his interesting words.

"Sir Walter Raleigh had been put upon trial, and convicted of high treason, on November 17, 1603, but was not

executed till October 29, 1618, he having remained in prison for fourteen years, when the king sent him upon an expedition to Guiana. He was executed upon his return, through the intrigues of his Spanish, jesuit enemy."

After a blank of a few moments Cronus said, impressively:

"I am now going to give you a shock which will forever associate your memory of the Tower of London with horror and disgust. You are soon to witness the execution of one of the finest characters England ever produced, the wholly innocent Sir Walter Raleigh, the victim of the politico-religious fanaticism of his period. A baser set of men than those in power in England at that time, never disgraced civilization.

"You may again have a few words with Sir Walter, in his cell, before he is conducted to the scaffold for execution."

So strong was the impression, both the Doctor and Grub experienced a reaction which penetrated the veil of concentration, and they felt a grief, which they could not conceal, upon meeting Sir Walter, but his cheerful countenance, and his apparent indifference to his pending fate, dispelled their sorrow and inspired them with a similar elation.

The interview was brief, but of the utmost importance. Sir Walter confided to them that he had concealed a complete reproduction of the accusation and trial by which he had been condemned, revealing how they could possess themselves of this priceless document, and authorizing them to publish it to the world. He declared his innocence of the charges preferred against him, and forgave his king and his enemies, holding one great regret, and that was the leaving of his beloved wife. They witnessed the pathetic parting between them just previous to Sir Walter's being led forth, which again brought them in his presence, and then they witnessed the horrid execution. Even the deputy, who wielded the axe, knelt and begged the forgiveness of his victim.

The Doctor and Grub were aroused from their trance, each by the loud weeping of the other. It was a physical

reaction due to the trying scene. It was such reactions that were hurtful.

The Doctor immediately declared:

"Grub, I am now fully convinced that *our subjective mind and the universal mind are one*, with a physical barrier between. We must study this contact until we have the whole secret. By our concentration we are made mediums. A misunderstanding of this causes many to believe in spiritualism, but the truth is, they themselves are, in different degrees, mediums, through which the essenic memory takes form. We have a very important subject before us."

They went systematically about verifying the suggestion of the record of the trial of Sir Walter Raleigh being available, and the actual finding of it seemed like a miracle. It was a complete and courageous exhibit of the proceedings, with all their glaring treachery, political fanaticism, and religious bigotry.

Together they perused the document, and wondered how any so-called civilized nation could have permitted so rank a miscarriage of justice. They could only hold in utter contempt the prosecuting machinery, and the lord chief justice, for their brazen bigotry, intolerance and hypocrisy.

"We shall publish this, Grub, to let the world know the truth," said the Doctor.

"Huh! No wonder they kept this thing concealed in the Tower of London for one hundred years," growled Grub.

"But, the all-important thing is, our supposed desire to visit London was an inspired thing, to reveal to us that this universal contact is a real conscious power, capable of guiding us to material contacts. The procuring of this Raleigh manuscript is the concrete evidence. I have no further desire to see London. But it does not follow that we will not have similar suggestions to visit other places for some mysterious purpose."

"I agree with you. I do not care to again visit London," said Grub.

Note: We have a limited number of copies of the amazing trial of Sir Walter Raleigh, at 50 cents the copy. First come, first served, postpaid. Address Thomas Sawyer Spivey, Pool Hill Farm, Shawneetown, Ill.

CHAPTER VIII

"Doctor, I feel that you are skeptical about my larval theory," said Grub. "Therefore if you will permit me to do so I believe I can put an end to your doubts."

"Shoot!" replied the Doctor, "I'll be either hero or martyr."

"Well, to refresh our memory, let us examine the primary or positive set of waves," said Grub.

"Just a moment; let me get that. You said positive. Do you mean that the series of waves coming out of the electron is positive, and these waves carry the living germs?" asked the Doctor.

"Yes, and the waves pushed out of the hydrogen spiral are negative," replied Grub.



"Naturally, to culminate in the hydrogen spiral, the preceding waves must carry the elements which form the succeeding ones, and the latter must suppress, absorb or annihilate the former. The process proves the tension theory of electric currents. The highest tension is in the kinetic, nitrogen wave, with its internal rings: the first relaxation breaks the rings into spirals as seen in the body of the oxygen wave; exhaustion is seen in the plaques in the carbon wave, with but a single life cell remaining in the hydrogen spiral.

"The original ring, and the recuperative spiral, later suggest orbital and axial motion in the planetary body. This planet draws its nitrogen from universal sources, and its oxygen from the planetary system.

"The struggle between nitrogen and oxygen, for control, is seen in the desire of nitrogen to annihilate activity by freezing matter into a crystalized state, and oxygen decom-

posing matter by fire. Oxygen burns its way to hydrogen over the dead body of carbon, but this exhausts twelve of its units as exhibited in the twelve lifeless plaques of carbon, leaving but the life spark, as represented by the head, and four of its oxygen units, the life cell is converted into a hydrogen spiral with the carbon body wound about it.

"The four remaining oxygen units resemble helium = 4.

"The four remaining oxygen atoms seek to unite with two hydrogen atoms, which retain one atom of oxygen, and cast off three oxygen atoms, with the result: $\text{OH}_2 = 18$ water, the water of life (Rev. 22:1). Oxygen cannot regurgitate back, and having no exposed contact with any other element, forms a molecule, $\text{O}_3 = 48$, *ozone*, which gives to our sky its blue color. The head of each wave is a hydrogen measure.

"What has become of carbon? Nothing of this primary, positive set of waves is utterly annihilated. Exhausted of its moisture, carbon is crystalized into the hardest and most precious of all known substances—the diamond.

"This is the mysterious stone of Rev. 2:17, 1 Peter 2:4 and Luke 20:17. 'Rejected but become the head of the corner' Mark 12:15).

"Here is the evidence that the ecclesiasts plagiarized the wisdom of the gnostics.

" 'And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, preceding out of the throne of God and of the lamb' (Rev. 22:1).

" 'For John truly baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy ghost not many days hence' (Acts 1:5).

"The holy ghost means the breath, the power of respiration, essential to all living matter.

"This identifies John as the primary carbon, who witnesses the coming of the oxygen wave of Christ who brings respiration, the holy ghost, the breath.

" 'The Lord Jesus comes in flaming fire' (2 Thess. 1:8).

" 'And power was given unto him to *scorch* men with fire' (Rev. 16:8.)

“‘Jesus shall baptize you with the holy ghost and with fire’ (Matt. 3:11).

“‘Baptism is at birth, hence the earthy man is not born till the power of respiration is given.’ This is the breath God breathed into his mud man.

“‘The holy ghost was not yet given them because that Jesus was not yet glorified’ (John 7:39).

“‘God anointed Jesus with the holy ghost, and God was with him’ (Acts 10:38).

“We breathe the same holy ghost from our atmosphere, nitrogen and oxygen, therefore we inhale God and Christ with every breath.

“Jesus was born, and baptized by John, by water, before he received the holy ghost.

“‘Jesus said unto him, verily, I say unto thee, except man be born again he cannot see the kingdom of God’ (Jno. 3:3).

“‘Except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.’

“‘That which is born of flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the spirit is spirit’ (Jno. 3:5, 6).

“It is evident that the man born of the flesh is he who is born of water. *Lymph* means clear water, therefore this has reference to the leucocyte in the lymph. The spiritual birth refers to respiration, hence it is born of the blood. The kingdom of God is the brain.

“This attitude reveals the electron as the throne of God in the electric or vibratory world, and Jesus as the symbol of sacrifice in the material world. The lamb symbolizes sacrifice. Jesus is the life and the life is the light of men (Jno 1:4).

“Bringing the symbolism into more visible contact, the seat of God is in the sun, and Christ is the light of the sun. These are the visible aspects of the God and Christ principles in nature. Later we will see that the light reflected from the moon is the Christ.

“‘I am the light of the world’ (John 8:12).

“The negative series of waves reveal the material cre-

ations, demonstrating two important things. First, that embodied life begins in the waters and creeps out upon the land, and rises into the atmosphere. This is the first resurrection. Second, that all living matter on this earth is named man, which corroborates our theory of the formation of the hydrogen spiral producing water. The earth is the father of all living earthy things and it, originally, was cast out of the fiery sun.

"*Adam* means earthy, man.

"But the most significant symbolism of this, is its personification in Abraham.

"'Abraham who is the father of us all' (Rom. 4:16).

"Abraham comes out of *ur*, fire. Therefore Abraham signifies the heat or warmth of the sun, insofar as begetting life on the earth is concerned. He is father to Jesus Christ, the life of nature (John 1:4; Matt. 1:1).

"The fact that Jesus is symbolized by the oxygen wave corroborates this.

"This identifies *Abraham*, the father of multitudes, as the earth, as distinguished from:

"'But to us there is but one God, the father, of whom are all things' (1 Cor. 8:6).

"*Abram* definitely identifies *Abraham* as the high priest. Ab = father, ram = high.

"*Abram* was the son of Ter-ah. *Ter* = the earth, *ah* means God, the earthy God.

Terah is called the laggard, identifying him as the lagging energy of the carbon wave.

"*Terah* also comes out of *ur*, fire.

"In the code the earth symbolizes production. This also is important, for Abraham, upon coming out of Ur, settles in *Mesopotamia*, meaning abundance, which lies between the two great rivers, the *Hiddekel*, meaning *rapid*, and the *Euphrates*, meaning *fructification*.

"This is a very plain story, Doctor.

"The ecclesiastic scheme places the ecclesia and the priest-

hood in the positive wave system, and the militant church, and humanity, in the negative wave system.

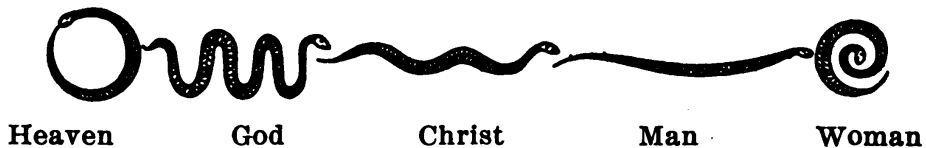
"Between these is baptism by water and fire—the negative system being born out of the spiral.

"He-aven is *made*, the place of God. *He* = a masculine prefix, *aven* = nothing or nothingness, which is equated with empty space.

"*Water* means a multitude of laws.

"*Fire* means judgments

"Let us see to what extent they have plagiarized from the ancient, gnostic system.



"‘Our God is a consuming fire’ (Heb. 12:29).

"‘I am the light of the world’ (Jno. 8:12).

"‘God is not a man, nor the son of man’ (Num. 23:19).

"‘Christ is a man’ (1 Tim. 2:5). ‘And the son of man’ (Matt. 8:20).

"‘Man is the son of God’ (Mark 15:39).

"‘Abraham is the father of us all’ (Rom. 4:16).

"Including Jesus Christ (Matt. 1:1).

"‘There is one God, and one mediator between God and man, the man Christ Jesus’ (1 Tim. 2:5).

"Abraham is a form of Christ.



"You remember, I said the oxygen wave burned its way through the carbon wave?

"Back in Deuteronomy we find the origin of the declaration in Hebrew 12:29.

"‘For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God’ (Deut. 4:24). This is the sun.

"The word jealous betrays the positive, aggressive char-

acter of the oxygen or Christ wave. Moreover, if the carbon wave is the earth, and man, it explains how Abraham came out of fire, *Ur*—he is the heat of the sun.

"Hebrews 12, allegedly an exhortation to faith, is a commendation of the new testament above the old. Nevertheless, in verse 29 they say 'our God,' whereas in Deut. 4:24, the expression is 'thy God,' proving conclusively the dictatorial character of the old testament, and the recognition of this supremacy by the new testament.

"Now, Doctor, hold your breath:

"The old testament represents the positive set of waves, and the new testament represents the negative set of waves. We may go deeper into this later.

"The ecclesiastical scheme draws the universal idea into the planetary field, in order to appropriate and personify visible bodies to make the suggestions more impressive.

"The *sun* is the God and fire.

The *atmosphere* is Christ and diffused light.

"The *earth* is humanity—man and woman.

"The *moon* is the church and priesthood, separated from the common, earthy herd.

"*Light* means revelation of knowledge and education. The only sources of natural light being the sun and the moon, the one arousing physical activity during the day, and the other reflection and meditation by night. Hence the sunlight reflected to the earth by the moon is the true Christ, 'ruling the earth by night.'

"In the code the stars are put for princes and civil rulers, giving but scant reflected light.

"Now we may grasp why humanity was cast down into ignorance. The truth must be concealed, and the semblance of education was to be used as a bribe to draw chosen ones into the church, and ignorance was to draw the earthy producing masses away from the truth, and bind them to the labors of feeding themselves, and supporting the church in luxury.

"The ecclesiasts claim the whole as its own, naming the

struggling producing masses the 'militant church' (Rev. 3:10) to be tempted and tried in the fire of evil examples set as snares to bind them.

"Those who are wise enough to see and avoid these snares are taken into the fold of the chosen ones.

" 'O ye seed of Israel his servant, ye children of Jacob, his *chosen* ones' (1 Chron. 16:13).

"*Israel* is the church of Christ. From the church priesthood are chosen those who pass higher, to take a place in the ecclesia, the governing body, whose chief is 'king of kings' and 'lord of lords.'

"*Jacob* means to supplant by trickery or force. *Rebekah*, the mother of Jacob, means snare, trap.

"The church of Christ is the dispenser of the education to the militant mob.

"This is a specimen of that enlightenment.

" 'The fear of the Lord! That is wisdom' (Job. 28:28).

"The rule of fear! That is christianity!

"As to the dispensation of real wisdom, Jesus says, in secret, to his chosen ones:

" 'Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God; but unto them that are without (the masses), all these things are concealed in parables.

" 'That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them' (Mark 4:11, 12).

"Can you grasp the devilish intent of this? It was never intended that the common, producing masses should be educated and raised from a state of degredation.

"Do you now understand why the catholic church prohibits the use of the Bible in the public schools?

"Symbolizing the four elements of ancient philosophy:

"Fire, air, earth and water.

"*Fire* vengeance and judgments.

"*Air* deportment, freedom.

"*Earth*, production, misery, degredation.

"*Water*—a multitude of laws.

"There is nothing left for them to usurp, therefore, there remains but hell for those who know the truth and will not participate in the diabolical game, and hell means the grave.

"The inquisition removed fifty millions of non-believers."

"Grub," slowly said the Doctor, "you have made plain to me the real policy of the church from its origin. It was to cast mankind down into abject misery and oppression under civil governments, and pose itself as a saving power, and a mediator between the government and the people. It is logical, that the greater the distress, and danger, the more urgent is the call for aid and protection."

"Of course, Doctor, didn't Mary, rebellion, carry Jesus into *Egypt*, meaning misery and oppression? And did not God call him out of *Egypt* and into *Galilee*, meaning revolution? It was the intent of the Christian scheme to revolutionize the world," said Grub.

"Well, that reveals a real danger to the people of the United States," said the Doctor. Europe may be likened unto *Egypt*, and colonization of America the leading of the Israelites into the wilderness to be tempted and tried. I view this only as a fanatical thing."

"Just a moment, Doctor, I knew what you were leading up to. Here it is:

"'And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments or not.

"'And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger' (Deut. 8:2, 3).

"Wait, Grub," exclaimed the Doctor. "My God! I now understand the grave situation here in the United States. We are now being put through that identical test. The nation is being smothered by a multitude of criminal laws, forcing whole classes into crime by legislation. The nation is being consumed by taxation to humble the people in poverty. Crime, imbecility and ignorance are being commercialized. This

damnable ecclesiastic thing will force rebellion and revolution onto this nation."

"Again I have anticipated you, Doctor," said Grub. The present situation is an attitude of vengeance. Its purpose is to destroy the nation, and it was premeditated as proven in the very beginning of the new testament.

"'Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt; for the tree is known by his fruit' (Matt. 12:33).

"This tree is the people of the United States. Evil is being cultivated for the fruit it yields. The people are being legislated into crime because transgression is commercialized. The horror of it all is, that imbecility must be cultivated along with crime and poverty so:

"'They may see but not perceive and hear but not understand' for the fear that the people might rise and destroy the horrible monstrosity which is destroying them."

"Let's rest and think, Grub," said the Doctor.

CHAPTER IX

"I have another one this morning, Doctor," exclaimed Grub, as the Doctor came into the library.

"I am just in a humor to listen," replied the Doctor, and he comfortably seated himself in a large chair. "You seem to be developing a remarkable discernment of our subject as you delve into its mysteries."

Grub arranged his papers, his reference books, and some maps, then said: "I am fully convinced that the ecclesiastical exploitation, in its original conception, was a premeditated assault upon established civilization, a bold and selfish conquest for profit and power. It was inspired by the secret Roman desire to conquer and rule the world, and regulate the conduct of all peoples. The words *ecclesia*, *catholic* and *universal* were not adopted for nothing.

"This constant harping about 'God's kingdom' is a more intimate thing than we seem to realize.

"Now, we know, a kingdom means an earthy thing, a country, a nation, a people ruled by a human being called a king. Hence, in this sense, God must be a man to rule over a kingdom. We have shown, conclusively, there is no other than a material foundation, where the physical control of people is concerned. Therefore, such a kingdom as described in the Bible, must, of necessity, be on this earth. There is not one single evidence revealing any other place, where such an organization could exist. Moreover, such an institution is radically opposed to a republic form of government, therefore, it condemns the United States, openly expressing treason against its original constitution.

"There is a tacit evidence of fraud in the word king, as applied to God, found in the secret code.

"The word king does not mean an individual; it signifies a 'tribe' or 'clan.' Must we, then, accept and acknowledge some *clan* to rule over the whole world, and name it 'god of gods' and 'lord of lords,' and recognize some leather-

necked priest, as its head, as 'king of kings' over all the nations of this earth?

"Let us first examine to see what the Bible reveals, before we go into the technical purposes of this cherished ecclesiastical exploitation to usurp the ruling powers of the world, and seat a super-government to dictate to the established civil governments how they must rule the people.

"If it was not the original intent to establish a government, the name *ecclesia* would not have been filched and adopted. The name not only means a legislative form of government, but it specifically means a cruel, drastic tyranny which is only exceeded by the hateful, vengeful Biblical theory of a universal government.

"The *ecclesia* was the legislative body which ruled, robbed and ruined ancient Athens. By taxation it confiscated all the properties of the people.

"We would better take heed in the United States. Taxation, in a multitude of forms, is assuming a confiscatory character. Our federal government knows less about the expenditure of vast sums collected from the people by devious expedients, under the protection of laws, than it knows about the number of laws on the statute books. It has been cautiously suggested that, in the emergency of war, that all property be confiscated by the government. Nothing in history more approaches highway robbery. This is suggested by the same secret forces which advocate the branding of the people.

"The God-king of the Bible is a cruel, vicious, vindictive, jealous, murderous character.

"The very beginning of the church is suggestive of bribery on the part of this fabulous God. He bargained with the *high priest* of fire-worship, *Abram*.

"'Fod said unto Abram, I am the almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect.

"'And I will make my covenant between me and thee. Thou shalt be a father of many nations' (Gen. 17).

"The next important bribery was that which caught Jacob in the net.

“‘And Jacob vowed a vow, saying: If God will be with me, and keep me in this way that I go, and will give me bread to eat, and raiment to put on,

“‘Then shall the Lord be my God;

“‘And of all that thou shalt give me I will surely give the tenth unto thee’ (Gen. 28). This established the priesthood.

“Here is a clean-cut conspiracy for graft. The Lord, here, means the master, the boss.

“*Jacob* means usurpation by trickery, or by force.

“*Jacob’s* mother, *Rebekah*, means snare, trap.

“Jacob named the place where this bargain was entered into *Bethel*.

“*Bethel* means the *house of God*—the church.

“The place was formerly called *Luz* meaning almond. And this significant meaning corroborates the trend of bribery. The *almond* is one of the offerings of Israel in passing into Egypt to gain good will (Gen. 43:11, 12).

“*Jacob* is Israel, the organization of the church of Christ.

“And this explains the purpose of the christian scheme.

“*Is* = the light, *ra* = of the sun, *el* = first cause.

“The light of the sun is the first cause of all.

“Christ declares: ‘I am the light of the world’ (Jno. 8:12).

“This vulgar type, Jacob, is the whole foundation of the christian church. A polygamist; defrauded his brother; lied to and swindled his father; swindled his father-in-law, and was criminally intimate with his servant girls, like unto his grandfather Abraham, only more so.

“I have repeated these details, Doctor, to show the true origin of this usurpative power, which threatens to drive all mankind mad, with its illogical and unnatural theories of government.

“We will now see what kind of man this organizing God is.

“‘Now I know that the Lord is greater than all other gods, because he was above them’ (Exodus 18:11).

“Here is an admission that there are many gods, but the big one is the ‘boss.’

"It was *Jethro*, the high-priest of Midian, who made this statement.

"*Jethro* means posterity, hence it speaks of God's past.

"*Midian* means strife, quarrel, discord, contention, bickering, wrangling.

"*Moses*, the law, fled to Midian, when he committed murder (Ex. 2:12), and the law became associated with the church by Moses marrying Jethro's daughter.

"This is the union of the law with the church.

"This union ended with the coming of Christ. *Moses*, the law; *Midian*, strife, and *Zipporah*, mourning, was a fine combination to rule the world.

" 'The law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ' (Gal. 3:24).

" 'Christ is the end of the law' (Rom. 10:4).

"Moses declared to Jethro, his father-in-law:

"Because the people come unto me to inquire of God, and his laws.

"When they have a matter they come unto me; and I judge between one and another, and do make them know the statutes of God and his laws' (Ex. 18:15, 16).

"The high-priest tells the law this is wrong, urging that it is too much authority for the law to assume, and he suggested the appointment of 'usurpative judges with martial powers and arbitrary rule' (Judges 7).

"This was the union of state and church, and the beginning of the rule of fear, under the law, and its enforcement by judges.

" 'The Lord your God is God of Gods, and Lord of Lords, a mighty and terrible God' (Deut. 10:17).

"This is another admission that there are other gods and other lords.

" 'God is greater than man' (Job 33:12).

" 'Great and dreadful God' (Dan. 9:4).

"Moses, the law, had previously been made a God to Aaron, the teacher, enlightener (Ex. 4:16). Also God to Pharaoh.

"I the Lord thy God am a jealous God' (Ex. 20:5).

"'God is light' (John 1:5).

"Right here, Doctor, is another place to prove that John is the carbon wave in our primary system.

"'John was not the light but was the witness which preceded the revealed light' (Jno. 1:8).

"John being the carbon wave naturally lost his head which became the hydrogen atom.

"This emphatically reveals that man appeared upon the earth before God or Christ was revealed. Of course this was natural. It is a self-evident fact that before God could assume control and authority, there had to be something to be controlled. Now this reveals a clean-cut false-pretense, for the principles, representing God and Christ, were inseparable parts of the creative process. To remove the carbon wave would have been as disastrous to the whole system as to remove the nitrogen or oxygen waves. Therefor man is as much of a God as the others. To cover this they declare:

"'Christ is all and in all' (Col. 3:11).

"And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all' (1 Cor. 15:28).

"This definitely reveals God, Christ and man as one being, and they may only be revealed in the material man, for only material things are visible. Man is the manifestation of God in the flesh.

"Christ declares: 'I and my father are one' (Jno. 10:30).

"This is a chemical proposition. If it refers to the primary system of waves, it is true. The oxygen wave is concealed, potentially, in the original nitrogen wave. Upon being revealed, the oxygen symbolizes Christ as the son of God, and within the oxygen wave, potentially resides the carbon wave and the hydrogen spiral, man and woman.

"But, in the secondary series, God and Christ are not one, for the oxygen wave is born out of the carbon, Christ becoming the 'son of man.' The oxygen wave however rises and unites with nitrogen the father, or God, but not as one,

for this has reference to oxygen and nitrogen in our atmosphere, surrounding the material earth. This atmosphere is a mechanical mixture, therefore, the oxygen and nitrogen atoms do not chemically combine as one; they are, in fact, antagonistic elements.

"Do you see the difference, Doctor?

"The descending series is the creative system of waves, centering in the earth; hence it is the spiritual. The ascending waves beget the holy ghost, the breath we breathe. In either direction the earthy can not reach God except through Christ. Hence Christ declares: 'I am the way; no man cometh unto the father, but by me' (John 14:6).

"Christ being light, reveals, in the positive waves, the worship of the sun. In the secondary waves, Christ, light, is 'born of man,' revealing fire-worship.

"Could anything be made plainer than that, Doctor?"

"That certainly is a revelation," said the Doctor. "After all, the whole christian idea is a chemical proposition expanded into a physical revelation."

"We now have ample foundation upon which to erect that marvelous similitude, the 'kingdom of God,' a universal kingdom in image and likeness, meaning the assembling into one body of all the nations of the earth.

" 'The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ' (Rev. 11:15).

"Does that sound like a kingdom some place up in the air?

"Is this triumph over all nations the end of premeditated conquest?

" 'We wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the world' (Eph. 6:12).

"Do you suppose for a moment they intend to move the necessary office furnishings up into the heavens?

"The temporal power of popes appointed ruling powers in Europe as the same political power appoints the legislative and ruling figures here in the United States. We must remember, airplanes were unknown when the Bible was written.

"Why do the people of these United States, this republic, of, by and for the people, sit every sabbath and listen to thousands of preachers uttering their treasonable declarations that they will, in due time, convert this republic into a kingdom?"

"It is truly said: 'What fools these mortals be.'"

"And now, Doctor, I will develop my theme. I have formed an idea that we may trail our gnostic waves into the heart of this heathenish exploitation. Heathenish because it has filched and plagiarized all its doctrines from religions which they have called heathenish.

"In an age of mythology, fable and romance, wise, thinking, reasoning men vied with each other for the supremacy and control of mankind, each group striving to make its system most attractive and appealing to the masses of people. Greece, with its mythology, was superceded by the Roman, with its heroism, to establish a world empire. Monastic priest-hoods conceived the idea of a super-government to lord it over established nations, and to this end they plagiarized the Greek name, *ecclesia*, meaning a legislative or law-making body. This they attempted to develop into a universal theocracy, plagiarizing this idea from the gnostic theory of universal natural laws.

"Gnosticism alone had solved the great riddle of the universe, tracing the creative processes down to man as the final image and likeness of the planetary system. Ecclesiasticism systematically destroyed gnosticism, and attempted to confiscate and absorb its great wisdom. Hence, man became the working model of the secret ecclesiastical organization.

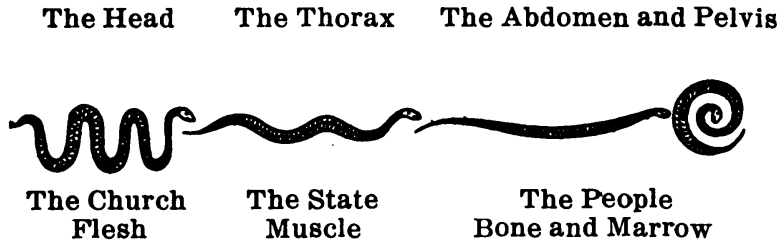
"Man became the creative God, and the universal kingdom the image.

"This romantic fraud necessitated the suppression of gnosticism and the secretion of the wisdom and knowledge of previous ages, in order that these might not reveal the truth.

"Ecclesiasticism now attempted to mold all mankind into a plastic mass (from which to make the earthy man,

comprising all nations and peoples, after the universal model.

"The first step was to divide the then known world into four divisions corresponding with the four essential divisions of the human body.



"*Italy*, or *Italus*, was named the 'Garden of Europe.' This represents the 'Garden of Eden' out of which this is all developed.

"The name *Italus* means a bull calf.

"It is most significant that the name *Europe* is the Schemetic name *Ereb*, meaning *darkness, evening*; technically meaning deprivation of intellect.

"When God first created the heaven and the earth, the earth was without form, and darkness was upon the deep.

"The Genesistic day begins with the evening.

"We have previously found that the beginning of the church scheme was the bargains God made with Abram and Jacob, both of which were sent into Egypt, symbolizing ignorance, misery, and oppression. And it was out of Egypt that *Israel* was drawn, and *Israel* means the church of Christ.

"Doctor, right here is positive evidence that the dark ages of the early centuries was a premeditated suppression of all learning, to cast the masses into the darkness of ignorance as the beginning of the ecclesiastic conquest of Europe. The new world was unknown at that time. Nevertheless *Er* means watching, and *Eb* means the beyond, and this is *Europe* watching the new world.

"*Is* = the light, *ra* = of the sun, *el* = the first cause.

"*Light*, in the code, means knowledge, learning, joy and prosperity.

This light, this Israel, was withdrawn and mankind was left groping in the darkness of abject ignorance for a thousand years (486 to 1495). This is authentic history.

"'God came from *Teman*,' the flaming desert.

"'Christ came from *Paran*,' monkish caves (Hab. 3:3).

"Africa was allegedly peopled by Ham. Ham begat *Canaan* merchandising and trading.

"Ham means heat, zeal, enthusiasm.

"The monks who originated the christian scheme came out of the flaming Libyan desert, and similar exclusive retreats.

"Abraham came out of *ur*, fire.

"*Fire* means judgments, afflictions, the torments of hell.

"In the early references to Africa, it was named as one of 'the three parts of the ancient world, and the greatest *peninsula* of the 'new universe.' Now why was the word 'universe' thus used by the promoters of the universal church, and applied to a country which it was exploiting?

"Egypt was the seat of sun-worship.

"Christianity is concealed planetary worship, surrounded with doctrines plagiarized from all other religions.

"The withdrawal of Israel from Egypt also symbolizes the plagiarization of sun-worship from the Egyptians—drawing the people away from sun-worship.

"The beginning of the mystery lies in the division of the then known world between Shem, Japheth and Ham, symbolizing the division of the church work, and the creation of the ecclesiastic man.

"*Shem* means name, fame.

"His first offspring reveals him as the brains of the church, the vatican, the secret ecclesia.

"*Shem* begat Elam.

"*Elam* means a young priest, a virgin, a secret, an age. *Age* means spoch.

"This is the first intimation of the immaculately conceived Christ—a doctrine not fully accepted till 1845.

"Moreover, the analysis of the name *Elam* is most suggestive here.

"*El* means the beginning, the first cause of power.

"*Am* means the female deity, the church.

"*Mary*, the mother of Jesus, is the church.

"*Shem* also is the father of the *Hebrews*. Alliance.

"*Japheth* means persuasion, enlargement, God's region, melting, the masses. By these were the isles of the Gentiles divided in their lands and peoples, every one after his tongue, after their families, in their nations (Gen. 10:5).

"*Gentiles* mean the nations which have not accepted the faith or laws of God—Europe.

"England is reckoned in with Europe, hence the use of the word isles in Gen 10:5.

"*Ham*, hot, zeal, black, darkest Africa. *Ham* begat Mizraim, meaning Egypt and Canaan.

"*Egypt* means oppression, misery, ignorance.

"*Canaan* means merchandizing, trading.

"These three represent the triune physical body of the ecclesiastic organization.

"*Shem*, the head; *Rome*, the brain; *Japheth*, the thorax; *Europe*, the heart; *Ham*, the abdomen and pelvis; *Africa*, the stomach. These are the seats of mentation, respiration and digestion of the great man.

"'Though this outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day' (2 Cor. 4:16).

"All outside of this field of militant operation is a fair field of conquest, and a place for the excrements.

"Originally it was intended to colonize Africa with the refuse of Europe.

"Later, the Americas became the dumping grounds for the refuse of the European nations, always accompanied by an agent of the church. Today this is the seat of digestion.

"These excrements fertilized new fields to bear fruits, to be gathered for the church by missionaries. North America was literally colonized, in the beginning, by shiploads of European convicts.

"Read the history of Oglethorp and Hudson.

"Although ages older than Europe, and the original founders of many of the christian doctrines, ancient Asia was left out of the reckoning, as the great, universal, unknown past, too ancient and far away to form a profitable contact. It could not be colonized, and to this time it has not been converted.

"Russia was not founded until the ninth century, but we have their origin in the Scythians (Col. 3:11) meaning fierce-looking, bearded men of the north, which they are to this day.

"The United States was not in existence at that time, but naturally became a part of the garbage-can into which Europe cast excrements and offal, and right well has she served her purpose, which a single instance proves. Every nation in Europe, and even China, expelled the Jesuits, as a secret danger to their governments. The catholic church dumped this militant branch into the United States, where it has thrived as never before. Truly, the catholics have the laugh on Europe; and a strangle-hold upon the United States.

"Doctor, do you know that the book of Revelation, in the new testament, the last book in the Bible, was not a part of the Bible until the year 1672? It especially applies to the United States.

"'The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner' (Luke 20:17).

"It was significant that the name Europe was selected to cover the nations. It is a Semitic word *ereb* meaning darkness, evening. Let us analyze these words, by referring to the ecclesiastic code.

"Darkness means ignorance, afflictions.

"Evening means the beginning of the night—the beginning of the dark ages, 486 to 1495.

"This positively has reference to the submersion of the people in ignorance and the bringing upon Europe of the dark ages, covering a thousand years.

"'Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour' (Matt. 27:45).

"The sixth hour means the sixth century, and the ninth hour means the ninth century, the most conspicuous period during the dark ages.

"Doctor, this is a secret confession that ecclesiasticism named Europe with a deliberate intent to bring upon the nations the period of darkness and ignorance.

"*Earth* means the producing masses of humanity.

"Do you grasp the horrible possibilities of this impudent classification of the peoples of the earth?

"The head—the priesthood, educational.

"The thorax—the civil classes, rulers, executives.

"The abdomen—the common laborers, production.

"The pelvis—the excrements, sent to new lands.

"All of these are servants to the concealed ecclesia, the invisible God who lords it over all.

"'Thou hast given him power over all flesh' (Jno. 17:2).

"The key to this whole diabolical game is the identity of this Jesus Christ character, a fabulous thing, a bald fabrication, yet 'preached literally, and him crucified.'

"Let us analyze him by their own code.

"If he is not all that he is literally represented to be by blatant blatherskites, the whole christian scheme falls with a crash. If he is what the code declares him to be, he cannot be what he is preached.

"*Jesus* is but the Greek form of the name *Joshua*, the savior of the Jews. He never existed as an individual.

"*Jo* means increased, *shua* means wealth. This is Jesus.

"This is the fruit for which the church is reaching. If they cannot profit by making the people good, they commercialize evil and cultivate them for the fruits of corruption.

"'Either make the tree good and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt and his fruit corrupt; for the tree is known by his fruit' (Matt. 12:33).

"The tree symbolizes man.

"The christian church is the wealthiest organization in

the world. Every dollar of this wealth has been wrung from the sweat and blood of slaving humanity.


"This is the true crucifixion.


"The name Christ is not a proper name at all. It is from Kristos, the Greek form of the word messiah, meaning initiation into high office and authority.

"Is it possible that humanity, with this evidence before it, will not even raise its bowed head to ask if it is true?

"Is it possible that it will continue to trudge beneath the galling yoke of tyranny without protest, if it is convinced that it is being faked out of all its vital energy?"

"Well, Grub, you surely have laid down a sordid hand this time. I have been following you, and your deductions are all fair, but I must shock you by declaring that the wise ones are too criminal to care a tinker's blank, as long as they are safe and unmolested, and the ignorant are too dumb to understand the truth when it is put up to them. There is a third class, eaten up by poverty. Now apply your waves to this and you have the truth as to position and support.

"The head, the church, coercion,  Intrigue.

"The thorax, the state, taxation,  Crime.

"The abdomen, the common people,  Poverty.

"The pelvis, the excrement,  Insanity.

"The church capitalizes ignorance.

"The law capitalizes crime and taxation.

"The digestive grind impoverishes the masses.

"The weaker class is driven into insanity.

"This is the end of the game."

CHAPTER X

"I don't feel like digging in the dirt this morning, Grub," said the Doctor, as they settled into their seats in the library.

"I'm willing to take a trip with you anywhere but London, with with filthy debtor-prisons, Limehouse, and White Chapel, not to speak of the haunted old Tower," said Grub.

"All right, we will take a jaunt and trust to our dear old pal, Cronus, to make it interesting. Our spiritual exercise in religious subjects is getting on my nerves," said the Doctor.

"Have you observed, Doctor, a sort of ironical bent to the instructions of Cronus? He sure speaks his mind, and he seems to have the same prejudices we are inclined to express," suggested Grub.

"Huh," grunted the Doctor, "Cronus may safely bless or curse anything. Time caters to no creed or prejudice. He expresses the undercurrent of sentiment in the hearts of men. He does not cure the ills of the world, but he does reveal the diseases and their results. It's up to men to correct their own evils. But, I'll tell you what I do observe, which is of much importance. He takes kindly to our essenic contact. No doubt because we shake ourselves free from worldly taints while in our concentrated state. I do not believe we could indulge in any form of evil while in this state. Time is the most unhampered critic of human affairs."

"Nevertheless, I suggest that you draw him out a bit," said Grub.

"I will question him," replied the Doctor.

Then they dropped into a state of concentration.

"Gee!" exclaimed Grub, "That was almost instantaneous. But where are we at?"

The Doctor seemed puzzled, then he laughed as he gazed up at the great arched structure before them, saying:

"Is it possible you do not recognize one of the great, heathen structures of Europe, the *Arc de Triomphe de l'Etoile*, in Paris?"

"Oh, yes, I do recognize it, now, from pictures I have seen, but why do you call it heathenish?" said Grub.

"Because, all these dens, called prisons or palaces, are constructed in jealous imitation of ancient structures of nations called heathens," replied the Doctor.

"Ah, here comes our faithful friend Cronus," said Grub, and they observed he was attired in a much more fastidious costume than he had previously worn. The Doctor good-naturedly called attention to this change.

"You see, it is this way," said Cronus. "When you are in Rome you must do as the Romans do." The same law applies to all other countries. Even time must reflect the frivolous changes in fashions. My other garb would make me too conspicuous here in Paris. I am as conscious of human eccentricities as you are. I do not care to have a train of curious people trailing us about. Ha! ha!"

"Uh, huh, that is a very plausible explanation," said the Doctor. "Are we liable to bump into other prowling spirits? Now will you tell us something about this ugly structure?" asked the Doctor.

"Only a pile of tommy-rot, to exploit the puff-ball Napoleon I. The French are strong on the imitation stuff."

"I am surprised at some of your cynical sayings, Cronus. You seem not to have much respect for worldly pride, and its monuments," softly said the Doctor, and he looked critically at Cronus.

"Well, if you had my experience, you also would be a cynic," growled Cronus. "These so-called monuments are all erected by the sacrifice of hundreds of millions of human lives, merely to appease the pride and vanity of a few self-exploited heroes. The world is as much under the sordid hero-worship today as it was back in ancient Greece.

"People stand and gape at this crude garden-gate in awe and wonderment, but not in admiration. Three thousand years ago peoples erected similar monuments in which this thing could be set for a window, but, I'll relate the history of this one.

"In 1805-6 Napoleon I erected a similar arc in the square inclosed by the *Tuileries* and the *Louvre*, in commemoration of his victories of these years, a mere imitation, on a petty scale, of the 'Arch of Constantine' at Rome. Criticism caused Napoleon to begin the erection of this larger structure in 1806, but it was not completed until 1836. It is 146 feet wide, 160 feet high and 72 feet in depth. The archway is 67 feet high and 46 feet wide. Its decorations are a conglomerate mass of alleged victories, heroic acts, panels, reliefs, and descriptions, which not even the French people understand. They are neither inspiring nor edifying, because most that they stand for, I have seen destroyed, or reversed, by the ravenous and unscrupulous hands of subsequent ambitious conquests. Napoleon's subsequent disgraceful failures cast a pall over this pet monument, and now it stands as a gateway at the head of one of the most interesting pathways of humanity, along which vain kings are wont to parade and receive the plaudits of hysterical thrill seekers. Look!" And he turned them about and pointed down the proud *Champs Elysees* of Paris.

"We will take a stroll on this thoroughfare."

They passed leisurely to the *Jardin des Tuileries*, to the *Place de corrousel*, and entered the *Palais Du Louvre*. This wonderland of art and antique junk was a revelation to both Grub and the Doctor, and they waited for Cronus to speak.

"So-called art, which, after all, is but imitation, has thrilled humanity through all ages," began Cronus. "Had the church not adopted art and music, christianity could never have enthralled credulous humanity and organized it protecting militant following. One class is caught by thrill, and another by fear.

"Both began to culminate about the year 1000, when humanity was groping in dense ignorance. The whole people had been schooled in the belief that the end of the world was approaching. Even public documents made provision for this end. Art and music began to reflect that galling fear. Everything took on a weird, tragical aspect. The church knew

that a huge fraud was being perpetrated upon the world, and it took full advantage of the great opportunity to plaster Europe, and especially France, with its gruesome architectural art, and to plaster their walls with its sorrowful, imploring faces, and its collapsed bodies with hands upheld to a fake Jesus Christ hanging upon a cross.

"In France, which had previously known little of art, the church seized upon this inspired fright with grim and gloating satisfaction, and rushed madly into the development of a Romanesque architecture, in the erection of many churches and cathedrals, which awed and overcame the nation. Ignorance always assumes a patronizing attitude towards such pretense. The enormous growth in the power of the church brought a flood of wealth to it. It began to send out vast numbers of missionaries, disguised under the name of pilgrims, to bring from foreign lands a harvest of antique relics with which to attract the people, and to feed the savage appetite for so-called art, which they had aroused. Hence the art galleries abound in arts of this character. The *Louvre*; the *Luxembourg*; the *Trocadero*; the *Musees de Cluny*; the *Carnovalet*; the *Galliera*, supplemented by *Versailles*, *St. Denis*, and *Chantilly*, constitute the 'Garden of Eden' of European art.

"The churches became the inspiration for the architectural artists of the world.

"A sigh of relief was heard all over Europe with the dawn of the year 1001, when it was discovered that the same old sun rose in the east; the same old world went merrily on, and the family wash remained intact upon the lines—but out of this century was hatched the murderous crusades, one of the most vicious of papal pastimes.

"But, the horrid disease, war, had been shot into Europe. Inspired strife and embroilment kept all the nations in a turmoil. The church, now in the saddle, seized the temporal power and grinned, that it had been so successful in deceiving the people. It was vindicated, because it was but a matter of time when the hypocrisy of christianity would reveal

itself to sane, thinking men, and that it had thoroughly grounded itself in ignorance, and surrounded itself with a militant mob, fed up on superstitious fear. Fear ruled the world, while ecclesiasticism was embellishing itself with awe-inspiring grandeur, and making secure its temporal power over European nations.

"I was an independent spectator and recorder of all the events of the critical period, extending up to the 18th century. I observed the grand opportunity of the church open up in the Americas. I foresaw that the United States would become the dumping ground for all the offal of Europe. The church lives, thrives and fattens upon evil. If there were no evil there would be no excuse or reason for the church. The popes of Rome, in due time, made peace with Europe, and surrendered the temporal power over its nations, to slip into America, and, unmolested there, build up its long cherished empire, where it could build a universal nation of all peoples and all tongues, and all nationalities under one government, to which it could secretly dictate.

"Where Japheth had originally established himself in Europe, 'every one after his tongue, after their families, in their nations' (Gen. 10:5). Papacy led Jesuitry into the wilderness of America, to prepare the way for the new Babylon; mixture, confusion and temptation, and trial, in the wilderness.

"Take a general view of the conditions in the United States, today, and you have the answer. But, this is sufficient of this. You may ponder it at your leisure. Moreover, you may ravage these galleries at some future time. I have a more important object lesson for you. Come.

"Because of your having previously visited the 'Tower of London,' I desire to also give you a view of its twin sister, 'The Bastille of Paris.' You will find it of kindred interest, revealing, as it does, the fiendish character of nationalism inspired to do irrational things, by the treacherous intrigues and connivance of the meanest secret organization that ever disgraced the earth—ecclesiasticism."

"We are deeply interested in all you have told us, Cronus.

You have frequently given vent to your adverse sentiments towards the ecclesiasts. Could you not briefly enlighten us about the name. It helps a lot to understand the secret processes of political organizations to know something of their origin," said the Doctor.

"A brief recital as we proceed, will be sufficient at this time," said Cronus, as they strolled along the *Rue de Rivoli*.

"The origin of the christian idea dates far back into antiquity, having no connection whatever with the Christian or Hebrew idea, excepting by plagiarism. There have been as many Christs as there have been major religions. The Christ character is but a fabulous hero-savior, who is invariably sacrificed. We are, right now, upon sacred ground in that sense.

"Napoleon Bonaparte was as much a Jesus Christ to his country as was the fictitious Jesus Christ of the christian exploiters. He was the hero of the French people, and became a martyr in their cause. You have not found him sainted.

"The true significance of the word Christ is initiation into office and leadership. It is not a proper name at all. It was brazenly plagiarized from the Greek 'Kristos,' the Greek form of the pretended Hebrew word 'messiah,' which means anointed upon assuming office.

"The whole ecclesiastical scheme was to unite all nations into one kingdom, through a church in common, which recognized in its head the supreme ruler over the whole earth, hence it adopted the name *catholic*, meaning all, universal. The evidence that it did contemplate a controlling government, and super-authority, is in the fact that it adopted the name *ecclesia*, which has no religious significance whatever. It has been difficult for the Christian church to explain this. The name *ecclesia* does not appear in the Bible, or the standard concordances, but the word *ecclesiasticus*, meaning of the assembly, is hidden away in the apocrypha, the part of the Bible which is not revealed. *Apocrypha* means hidden, concealed.

"*Ecclesiasticus* is the Latin for 'wisdom of Jesus Christ, son of Sirach.'

"*Sirach* also is a moot name, because it means the 'father of Jesus,' who did not know his own father, he is credited with so many . . .

"An analysis of the name makes of its suppression a mystery. *Sir* means reverent, *ach* means a troubler.

"In 1 Chronicles 2:7, one *Achar* is the troubler of Israel, the church of Christ.

"The affix *ar* means an adversary.

"The ecclesia, originally, long before the christian idea, was the cruel legislative body which governed ancient Athens. It was a crime to have imitated it. It was the personification of cruelty. By its system of taxation it confiscated all the properties of the common people, on the theory that extreme poverty is an agent of control and discipline.

"This is a doctrine also of the church.

"'The poor shall never cease out of the land' (Deut. 15:11). Why then charities?

"If the christian church was a thing inspired of a God of its pretensions, why did they select the name of one of the most drastic and tyrannical governments that ever ruled a helpless people, for its master organization, and thereby endorse poverty?

"We are now standing upon the material evidence of history, of the futility of this imitation. The catholic imitators had advanced far enough in their contemplated universal kingdom, to feel safe in revealing the purpose of the ecclesia. They erected the '*ecclesiastical states of the catholic church*.'

"The French people had deified a little Jesus Christ of their own, named 'Napoleon Bonaparte.' They went to Rome, took possession of the 'ecclesiastical states,' converted them into the 'Roman republic,' and sent Pope Pius VI away from Rome to look for a job as piano-tuner, or brick-mason. Just think of this, sending the vicar of Christ out of the eternal city of God to die on the soil of the new Christ. Pius VI died on French soil in 1799.

"The impudent nerve of these popes is well illustrated in this instance. The succeeding pope took the name of Pius

VII, and brazenly attempted to restore the former status of the 'ecclesiastical states,' but Bonaparte slapped his face, and took away his temporal power, and reduced him to the humble title of the bishop of Rome.

"But, here we are now; this is the real lesson of today. 'The Bastille of Paris.' Another imitation. It is practically a duplication of the 'Tower of London,' in point of history and reputation, and its horrors. Blood and terrorism were fashionable through the middle centuries.

"Originally the Bastille was the royal castle of Charles V, king of France in 1369, and, as usual, allegedly constructed for the defense of Paris, against the English, as though the king was the whole of Paris. The masses could take refuge in the sewers. The thing was completed in 1383.

"Like the tower of London, it afterward became the state prison, and the scene of the most deplorable of human suffering, and of frightful crimes—the French are a cruel people, whereas the English are brutal.

"The Bastille withstood a siege by Henry IV in the horrible war which desolated France, between the years 1587 and 1594. Yet, it was torn from its foundations and pulled down by that greatest of all human powers, the infuriated mob, seeking vengeance, in Paris, 1789. This was the commencement of the French revolution. The infuriated populace seized every official in charge of this monument of torture, conducted them to the *Place de Grève*, and there publicly cut off their murderous hands as instruments of torture. Then they cut off their heads, fixed them on pikes, and carried them in triumph through the streets of Paris.

"One of the great secrets of this tower of hell, was the prisoner known as 'the man in the iron mask.' The world never knew his identity. I am going to repeat it to you, in confidence, the nearest approach to the truth. He was the son of Anne of Austria, queen of Louis XIII, his father being that historical lady-killer, the Duke of Buckingham.

"The 'mask' died after long imprisonment, Nov. 19, 1703.

"Another horrible case was that of Francis Seldon, a

wealthy and refined man, imprisoned for criticising Louis XIV's bald head. Although he was called 'Louis the Bald' by every writer and historian in Europe.

"Thus, again, you have an example of the futility of imitation. You must not confound imitation with selectivity. The one instinct selects the real thing for its intrinsic worth. Whereas, imitation is a fraudulent false-pretense in many instances—for instance, the selection of the word ecclesia.

"My memory of Paris is neither edifying nor pleasing. The poisons of church intrigues still linger in the French nation. It attempted to carry water on both shoulders, in the most critical period of European national development, in consequence of which, it became a vicious irritant, a festering boil on the body politic of Europe, to periodically erupt and inoculate with its deadly virus, any other state striving to attain a healthy and peaceful position among nations. The quill which carried this poison was the secret intrigues of the popes at Rome. I shall reveal to you the evidence of this, the great tragedy of August 24, 1572—the massacre of St. Bartholomew's Festival Day, in Paris.

"No imagination of man has been able to picture a hell sufficiently equipped with cruelties to adequately punish the perpetrators of this greatest of all individual crimes committed by the catholic church.

"Before we vision the living picture, I will name the agents who directed the horrible massacre, which, it is conservatively estimated, murdered one hundred thousand helpless, innocent, men, women and children in twenty-four hours.

"Pope Gregory XIII, uncle of Catherine de Medici.

"Catherine de Medici, queen-dowager, mother of Charles IX.

"Charles IX, king of France.

"These were the instigators and abettors of this horrible crime, which spared not mother, nor infant child in her arms.

"This vile creature de Medici, with her half-witted royal son, sat upon a balcony and howled with ribald laughter, as they directed the bloody tragedy.

"Pope Gregory XIII, upon being advised of the appalling success of the enterprise, called a great festival reception, with fire-works, and the firing of cannon.

"Nature frequently resents and punishes such outrages against humanity.

"Charles IX literally died wallowing in his own blood, he dying of *purpura-hemorrhageau*, the bleeding at every pore of the body.

"His hag of a mother made harlots of her own daughters and joined them in their debaucheries.

"Now, for a moment, we shall look upon the actual massacre."

From a vantage point they witnessed the awful carnage with affright. Men, women and children ran screaming through the streets of Paris, pursued by fiends incarnate, who cut, clubbed and beat them to death, mutilating the body while the flesh yet quivered.

"Priests ran wildly among the throng, with uplifted crosses, loudly screaming: 'Kill! Kill! Kill all! God will take care of his own.'

"Great piles of dead bodies lay in the streets; the gutters were filled with streams of human blood, and blood dyed the Seine river red, while dead bodies clogged its flow.

They turned from this awful sight of human slaughter, nauseated and horror stricken.

"And yet, in the twentieth century, you will find throughout Paris, one hundred and fifty structures the names of which begin with 'Saint.'

"The murderous Gregory was sainted.

"The greatest outstanding evidence that no such character as the christian God ever existed is in the fact that the catholic church was not wiped out of existence for the St. Bartholomew Massacre.

"The proof that the rulers of Europe were in connivance with the powers at Rome, is manifest in the fact that all Europe did not rise in a body and destroy the church for this murderous crime."

"We are shocked beyond expression, Cronus," sorrowfully said the Doctor. "I must say, you are feeding us up on these terrifying nightmares, which no longer exist, especially in the United States."

Cronus laughed softly saying, "Your nation will awaken from its trance in due time. It has been rocked as an innocent baby long enough. When it awakens you will hear its mighty yell around the world. The conditions under which you live are treacherous to all humanity, beyond the wildest theories of past centuries.

"You are as ignorant of the dangers of intriguing forces as during the dark ages. You are surreptitiously being submerged in crime, insanity, and poverty, to render the masses innocuous and harmless, while the yoke of despotism is being rivited upon your necks.

"Never before in history has a people been so smothered in criminal laws. Never before in your own history has crime been so rampant. Your prisons are a disgrace to civilization; your insanity is increasing beyond the power to apprehend it. Your laws have increased so rapidly, not even your centralized government can enumerate them. Each new law adds a whole new class to your criminal list.

"Your poverty. Oh, what a tragedy. In a false-pretense of charity your whole country is in an uproar in an attempt to cover up actual starving conditions. And, lastly, you are taxing your nation out of existence, as the ecclesia of Athens did. The power which is secretly responsible for all this is the same that brought on the revolution in France and elsewhere. The purpose is to render the masses utterly helpless.

"This ulterior power is a victim of its own original teachings—fear; therefore it is utterly heartless in erecting its own safeguards. You are warned of the last step in this shameless disregard of natural human rights. If humanity stands for this last outrage, then it is hopelessly imbecilic. I will release you now with this shocking threat:

" 'And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor,

free and bond to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads;

“ ‘And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, this mark’ (Rev. 13:16, 17). ”

“This will naturally follow the suppression of free speech, and the legislation of all into crime as declared in Romans 3:19.

“When the Bible was written, finger-printing was unknown. I warn you, right now, strong pressure is being brought to finger-print, as potential criminals, every man, woman and child in the United States.”

“This will give you something to think about till we meet again,” and Cronus faded.

The Doctor and Grub sat up, staring. This had been a tremendous shock. The purpose was manifest; the lesson was to give them a full understanding of the undercurrent of the human conditions, especially in the United States. The reaction was not pleasant. They had been students of world events and were quick to grasp the truth.

“This is hot stuff Cronus is handing us, Grub,” remarked the Doctor. “But let’s not discuss it now. I must examine some new impressions made upon my mind. We will take the matter up at our next meeting,” and they thoughtfully separated.

CHAPTER XI

It was a gloomy morning and the Doctor and Grub seemed to be in sympathy with it, as they silently seated themselves at the table. Both seemed to have a premonition of something urgent or important.

"Doctor," began Grub, I am disappointed in a way. I think we had both contemplated travel and its pleasures, but, as I think it over, I believe it is highly possible that carnal pleasures are not recorded in the universal mentation, because they are physical impressions. Do you get me?" And Grub looked anxiously at the Doctor, whose face registered alarm.

"By Jove! Grub. You surely have said a mouthful," the Doctor exclaimed. "But the thing which startles me is to find that our exercise of this new mental power is drawing us into a thought in common. You have anticipated my subject for this morning's discussion. One of my first expressions was to be this quotation on the same identical point.

"To be carnal minded is death. For to be carnal minded is enmity against God, for it is not subject to the law of God; to be spiritual minded is life' (Rom. 8:6, 7).

"I first want to give my own impression, made by our experiences of yesterday. This experiment of ours is of far greater importance than we have yet realized. I am fully convinced that our subjective minds are but embodied universal mentation. Conscious intelligence is *awakened* by this embodiment. The living body is the mechanism by which it expresses itself. Moreover, this expression may only be visioned by living beings. Our external sense organs are the receivers, and our internal sense centres are the translators. Therefore understanding is wholly physical. Now, Grub, here is one for you. The universal mentation, and the subjective mentation, are one, and we may now identify the elements in this Bible quotation:

"'I and my father are one' (John 10:30).

"The personal pronoun 'I' is speaking and this is the Christ character.

"'I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the father but by me' (John 14:6).

"And now for the final stroke. This thing naming itself Cronus is the universal mentation forming a contact with our subconscious mind, and *awakening* our understanding. This is the true revelation. In our trance state we do not move from our seats, yet we actually experience the sense of vision and understanding.

"Only the senses of seeing and hearing are involved. We wonder, in our waking hours, why Cronus, who knows all things, is the medium.

"'No man knoweth who the son is but the father; and who the father is but the son, and he to whom the son will reveal him' (Luke 10:22).

"Now did the father betray the son when he was crucified?

"This makes it clear that God cannot reveal himself, but must be revealed through our subconscious minds, and this impalpable thing is named Jesus Christ.

"That revelation is the vision which we know as Cronus, an essenic being.

"Now, what is the purpose of this revelation. Is this difficult to know after having listened to his talk?

"And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually' (Gen. 6:5).

"This reveals that the universal mind is a conscious thing, which contemplates its creations with the same concern as though possessed of physical qualities. But, to accomplish a purpose which is understandable by men, it must form a contact with embodied mentation. This physical contact is the coming of the Christ principle, which is authority.

"I am convinced that such a contact has been formed in our case, and that the lectures of Cronus are revealing the desire of the greater mentation to correct evils which are bidding to destroy the works of nature, and pervert the purposes of

the creation of men on this earth. It is a self-evident truth, that pleasure and pain are embodied mentation, therefore men are responsible for their own troubles if left to their own resources, but when enslaved, and persecuted, whole nations of people suffer because of inspired conditions over which they have no control. The fact that Cronus dwells upon the prevailing evil conditions in the United States, reveals a desire on the part of the universal consciousness to correct these evils. This is a reactive process, which corroborates our own deductions, that the purpose of the creation of thinking, reasoning minds is to nourish the universal mind. Physical pain is but reflected mental distress, and nature rebels against the abuse of the natural gift of the power to think.

“Never before has the United States been in such deplorable mental distress. All the powers which control the masses seem determined to bring humanity to eternal pain and sorrow. This condition must be corrected, or this nation will perish. We know the original source and evil inspiration of the adverse conditions prevailing in the United States. A vicious assault upon the common masses has long been in progress, and the downfall of the nation prophesied, with unimaginable horrors. We are right now in the midst of a modern form of the murderous inquisition which tortured Europe. Mental torture takes the place of the physical torture, outside the prisons, and physical tortures crush the spirit out of men within prison walls. All respect for decent, self-respecting citizenship has disappeared. Finger-printing has superceded branding, and the electric chair supercedes burning at the stake. The men who execute the laws are gone crazy with excess of power to punish. Women and children are executed along with hardened men.

“Is it any wonder the universal consciousness is angered, when men advertise in advance their purpose to crucify humanity?

“Time and the universal mentation are one, and never ending.

“‘One day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day’ (2 Peter 3:8).

“It is the affair of men who rule mankind if they permit their own kind to defraud, persecute and destroy them.

“If the kings of this earth cannot distinguish between the Christ within their own bodies, and the fraudulent Christs posing as Gods upon earth, they must suffer in the end with the common herd.

“Right now the second thousand years is upon us.

“‘And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations’ (Rev. 20:7, 8).

“The United States is in the midst of that satanic hell right now. We are rapidly approaching a culmination, long anticipated by the contemptible idiots who have poisoned all human governments with their fake gods.

“When the end comes:

“‘The kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty, and every bondman, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains. And said to the mountains and rocks: Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne’ (Rev. 6:15, 16).

“Is any one fool enough to not understand this is a man? This means the pope of Rome. He has done it before; he will do it again.

“If the churches, as organized bodies, are not absolutely eliminated from American politics this end is not far away. At this very time the pope is broadcasting his godly interference in the civil affairs of this nation.

“But, now let’s get back to fundamentals.

“I believe that mentation is orbital, and physical action is axial, and this distinguishes between mind and matter. Matter cannot regurgitate back through the waves which create it. Do you follow me?”

“Yes, yes, go on,” excitedly responded Grub, and the Doctor continued:

"It is a self-evident fact that a spiral body cannot pass back over a straight line, nor can a straight, solid body adjust itself to traverse a curved line. If there is any re-adjustment it must be in some progressive way, and that means material bodies, and a continuation of a cyclic process."

"Well' let's continue the physical part of the cycle out of the spiral," suggested Grub.



"I have it! I have it!" exclaimed Grub.

"The first series, from the electron to the spiral is mental, and the second motion, from the spiral to the globular, is the physical. Permit me to illustrate this, Doctor, by the fruit-bearing tree. It is in line with my automatic work.

"The cold, warm, dry, and moist waves come to the earth as the spiritual or creative waves. Now see what these create. We will see them manifest in consecutive *waves*, *masses* or *consistency*, each producing its kind in a consecutive order.

"I will make a rough sketch of the tree as the manifesting product:

"Here we have the primary, creative waves collected in the earth, constructing for themselves a physical body en masse, yet revealing each wave individually in imitation of the creative series.

"Doctor, there can remain no doubt about the makers of the Bible being wise to this gnostic wisdom.

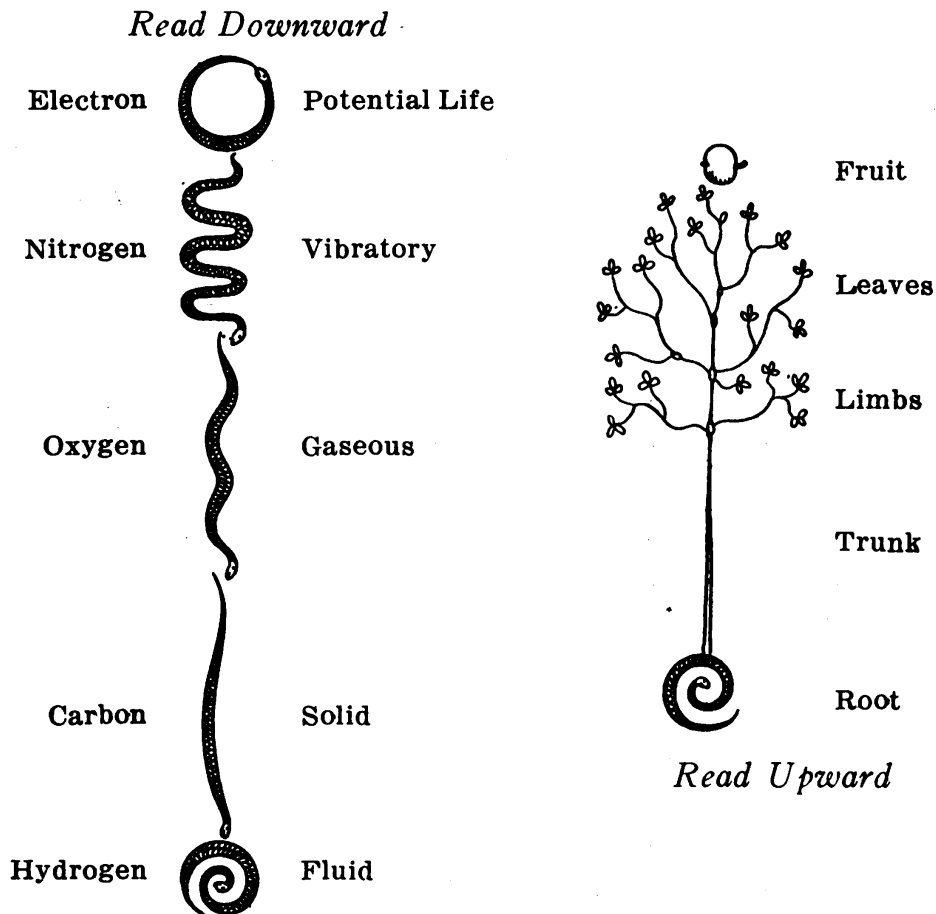
"'God created man in his own image, after his likeness' (Gen. 1:26).

"'And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew' (Gen. 2:5).

"The physical tree produces a potential globe, the apple, which carries the power to reproduce the tree. The fruit drops back to the earth, and while its own physical body dies,

CREATIVE WAVES

CREATED TREE



its spirit takes on a new body. This is the origin of the resurrection. They chose the apple tree because its fruit contains no godly essence. The acid of the apple is *malic* $C_4 H_6 O_5$, containing no nitrogen.

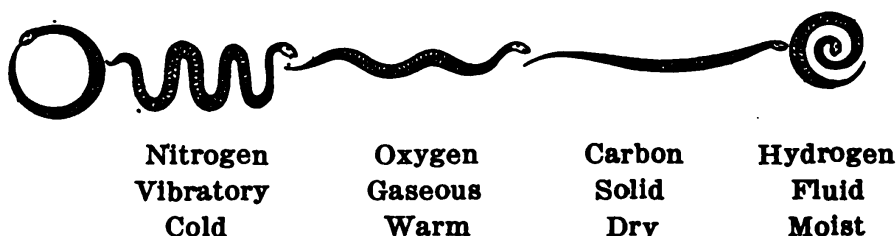
"We have opened the way for a tremendous discussion of our presence on this planet, and the purpose of organic, physical being, and this will especially involve human ignorance and errors. Had the original gnosticism survived the murderous assault of ecclesiasticism, human errors and imperfections would have been reduced to the minimum, instead of having developed to the maximum.

"We may as well face it calmly. We must blush, though,

for the inspired evils which have secretly beset ignorant mankind. We have little to be proud of."

"I realize the importance of your automatic work," said the Doctor. "These drawings are especially instructive. Have you followed these waves to their ultimate possibilities?"

"Yes, Doctor, and you will surely be surprised," replied Grub. "Now, for instance, examine these four primary waves:



"Thus, we see at a glance, that these waves reveal all the attitudes which physical, material bodies can assume.

"This manifests, of course, in waves, masses and consistency.

"But, the true revelation is found in the fact, that vegetation is earthy, and mankind is planetary, because of his independent liberty.

"The waves which form the tree are literally pushed out of the ground, in imitation of the reverse waves coming out of the original electric molecule. The expanding limbs point toward the sky, and its fruits, its last product, drop back to the earth.

"On the contrary, man is inverted, and all of his limbs point downward to the earth which nourishes him.

"'God made man upright' (Ecc. 7:29).

"This suggests an examination of this body to ascertain in what respect he is an image of planetary formation. We find a logical sequence, always corresponding with our four waves.


"Flesh, muscle, bone, marrow.

"Here is the same logical sequence.

"A much more important proposition is the division of the body into:


"Head, thorax, abdomen and pelvis, with functions corresponding with our waves.

"But still greater is the organic revelation, as the reflected planetary image.

 The brain—Mercury.


 The heart—Venus.

 The lungs—Earth.

 The stomach—Mars.

 The spleen—the Asteroids.

 The liver—Jupiter.

 The intestines—Saturn.

 The kidneys—Uranus.

"This approximately corresponds to our planetary system."

"Wait a moment, Grub; let me get my breath. This is crowding us too much. Let us rest for a while. I realize now the tremendous importance of this inspired stuff you call automatic writing. I find myself under a similar urge. We will continue this subject tomorrow," and the Doctor arose.

"Wait just a moment, Doctor," said Grub. "I have here a good one.

"Again examine the apple tree. The Greek mythology is not foolishness. It conceals the traditional gnostic wisdom. Mercury is the god of commerce. Let me show you the proof of this, and the origin of the *caduceus*.

"The waves of the tree as represented by its limbs have all their heads pointing toward the earth through the body. The trunk of the tree is the staff of Mercury, and the limbs represent the battling serpents coiling themselves about this staff, revealing that the tree is actually a common carrier, between the atmosphere and the earth, of the electrical waves, seeking contact with the earth's surface, essential to produce vegetation. Truly a wonderful commerce. But, Doctor, this

intimates that the earth breathes through vegetation, therefore, if the earth's surface is denuded of its forests, its breathing organs, it will die."

"Grub, this is a master discovery. The earth is just now experiencing an asthmatic condition. We must discuss this at length at an opportune time." And the Doctor passed out of the room.

CHAPTER XII

It was the afternoon. The small house-garden looked particularly inviting, and the Doctor suggested they adjourn there for their discussion.

"I trust you are feeling well, Doctor. That horrid trip to Paris still haunts me," said Grub.

"Ha! I never felt better in my life, or more fit for anything, even a St. Bartholomew Massacre, if I could choose my own victims," and the Doctor posed as a gladiator.

"I am quite convinced we have treated too lightly these illustrations of creative processes," said Grub, as he placed his work upon the table.

"I am all ears, Grub, and eager to grapple with your serpents. But I have in mind asking you to explain more fully the significance of using serpents to illustrate your vibrations or waves," and the Doctor drew a sheet of illustrations toward him.

"Yes, yes, I have frequently intended to make such explanation to you," said Grub. "I have made quite an exhaustive investigation of this symbolism. I do not hesitate to declare that the reason the christian church reviles and slanders the serpent is, because it is the only living creature endowed by nature to reveal the hypocrisy, and false-pretense, in the christian exploitation. It is the only living creature which naturally executes all of the creative waves in consecutive continuity. To us it reveals much more. It betrays the truth, that the ancient gnosticism was deeply versed in the creative processes, and a knowledge of the intent and purpose of peopling this earth, all of which is so bitterly antagonized by ecclesiasticism.

"It was essential for the ecclesiasts to bring the living serpent into bad repute, in order that humanity might not recognize the spiritual waves which it reflects and images. Man is not the only reflection and image of the god of nature.

"Nevertheless, the Bible admits the truth of the serpent reflecting wisdom.

" 'Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field' (Gen. 3:1).

"We must observe that, doubtless by error, the serpent is here paid a great compliment instead of receiving an insult. There are two ways of spelling the word subtil:

"*Subtile* means rare, delicate, nice, acute, refined.

"*Subtle* means cunning, crafty, sly, artful, wise.

"The first form is used in Gen. 3:1).

"In his instructions to his disciples, the fabulous Jesus unconsciously reveals the cunning form.

" 'Be thou as wise as serpents' (Matt. 10:16).

" 'Surely a serpent will bite without enchantment; and a babbler is no better' (Ecc. 10:11).

"Here is a subtle reference to the knowledge of the ancient practice of charming or echanting the cobra by Indian fakirs.

"That there is no intention to flatter the serpent in Gen. 3:1 is quite clear by:

" 'That old serpent called the devil and satan which deceiveth the world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him' (Rev. 12:9).

"Doctor, this was that serpent, and these vibrations, or waves, are his angels.

"They were cast out of the primary electron.

"Now the question immediately arises:

"If God did spitefully cast the 'devil' and 'satan' and his angels out into the earth, he must have had a purpose for doing so, and this recognition of the powers of the serpent, and their alleged perversion, reveals a sinister motive to fill the earth with evil. It is self-evident that such an act is for the furtherance of church ends. I have previously expressed the belief that the churches here in the United States are making a broad use of evil in every form for their own ends and purposes. Satan in this sense means evil. Evil is the devil turned loose.

“‘And when the thousand years are expired, satan shall be loosed out of his prison.

“‘And shall go out to deceive the nations of the earth” (Rev. 20:7, 8).

“Thus sin and the devil are acknowledge agents of the church, and are subject to its control.

“The serpent, in all ages of philosophy, has symbolized wisdom and knowledge. The church, from its first inception, repudiated science and philosophy, forbidding mankind to partake of them. Why? Because they reveal the gnostic wisdom, and expose the christian false-pretense.

“It is a peculiar thing, that, as little reference as possible to the serpent, is made in Bible dictionaries and concordances, and this is tainted by falsehood.

“Such fabulous stories of great sea-serpents as those attributed to Pliny, Phillips and others, are merely to inspire fear.

“The church, however, quickly seizes upon any symbolism which it can use. During the dark ages many symbols were used in which the serpent represented regeneration, due to the fact that it casts off the old skin for a new.

“To this day we have a reminder of the nourishing of the young by the old, in the fable of the stork bringing the babies. It is taken from a symbol consisting of a serpent coiled in a circle, with its tail in its mouth, and within the circle an old stork carrying upon its back a young one, and feeding to it a serpent, signifying the giving of wisdom to the young by the old.

“It is remarkable to what extent the church stultifies itself by reversing its uses of the serpent, at one time good, at another evil. The same applies to good and evil. “In the shedding of its old skin the serpent becomes the symbol of spiritual rebirth. “Its crawling in the dust figures sinful materialism.

“God said unto the serpent:

“‘Upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life’ (Gen. 3:4).

“Merely taking advantage of a natural simile, for this

curses the regenerative serpent also. The circular serpent, concealing potential wisdom, has been a popular symbol for ages, and by all nations given to philosophy.

"Egypt adopted and deified the crocodile because it has no tongue, symbolizing potential, unspoken wisdom. The serpent was deified as the expression of wisdom into knowledge, it having a forked tongue.

"The Chaldean for serpent was *acan*. The Bible converts this into *achan*, meaning the troubler—wisdom.

"The circular serpent of the Hopi Indians of Arizona (Horizona), carries the distinguishing nitrogen waves running through its body.

"The church has striven hard to conceal the serpent as the true gnostic symbol of wisdom, by the adoption of the captiv 'Pistis Sophia,' meaning wisdom.

"Pavitt, in his wonderful 'Book of Talismans,' says: 'The serpent, throughout all ages, has appealed to the imagination of man, to whom its various characteristics afforded opportunities for symbolic expression. It is used as a symbol of eternity; longevity; health, and vitality. In a circle, with its tail in its mouth, it indicates perpetual unison, and orbital motion.

"There is a remarkable evidence of the universal use of the serpent, as a vital figure, as found in the serpent ring used by the Aztecs as a symbol of the sun, and unending time.

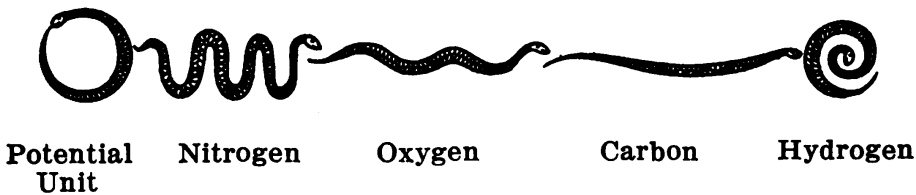
"The serpent in a circle symbolizes orbital motion, gathering wisdom.

"This is sufficient, Doctor, to justify my own deductions, and I shall insist that my adaptation of the motions of the serpent to creative processes, revealing consecutive attitudes, is original, until I have been shown evidence to the contrary. Moreover, if it is hidden in the gnostic wisdom, this concealment is to protect the christian church from exposure as a mere conglomerate mass of plagiarized ideas, theories and doctrines. Reason exposes the christian false-

pretense, therefore reason is suppressed, and condemned, along with science and liberal education.

"I have attempted to apply unprejudiced reason, and logic, in my examination, in order to trail the normal course of mentation in the creative processes.

"There are five attitudes of the creative, conscious mentation, and these may be reduced to chemistry:



"These waves assume two distinctive states in the creation of living matter.


"From the potential electron to the composite spiral is positive. From the spiral molecule to the living material cell is negative.


"Doctor, in the multiplicity of operations these two sets of waves are unerring guides. This was the basis for the traditional, gnostic wisdom. Embodied mentation followed these natural guides as the Indians followed their trails, and modern peoples their highways.

"When once started on its way the positive set of waves may not be broken. The individual waves cannot regurgitate back over each other, the undulations of each differing from the others to avoid this very act. It is the physical which is subject to accidents.

○ The original electron is the seat of potential wisdom, because it contains the conscious purpose of releasing its vital forces. It is a globule—an egg.

~~~~~ The cold nitrogen wave represents the released, kinetic energy, a controlled expansion. Motion begets a radiating heat, and heat begets light, and light reveals knowledge.

 The warm oxygen wave symbolizes revealed wisdom, converted into free knowledge. Diffused light is diffused knowledge. Light means intellect, or revelation with understanding.

 The carbon wave, the straight line of exhaustion, stability, and the absorption of primary, instinctive knowledge, inspiring carbon to complete its destiny, and assume the physical burden.

“Nature has wisely provided against the perpetuation of the straight line, which tends to crystalization, by turning it into a curvilinear course which executes a spiral. All bodies cast out into space follow this course.

☉ The hydrogen spiral, which culminates the positive series—a neutralizing or equalizing body, holding the powers of expansion, and contraction, a conscious control. This is the primary sense of respiration, the magnetized electric molecule containing all the creative forces, fortified by their previous experiences, and having the power to recuperate its own strength by attraction and absorption, and the power to extend its functions by repulsion, as observed in amoeboidal motion and division. Therefore this is a living cell. Its formula is the well-known plasmic cell— $\text{NOCH} = 43$ , from which are born both animal and vegetable life cells.

“These are repetitions, but they are of primary importance. It is highly possible that, under some conditions, these waves assume elongated, spiral forms, especially if confined in their course.

“As we have previously observed, this is a microscopic world of solid and fluid matter, surrounded by an atmosphere of nitrogen and oxygen, the model for all subsequent material living bodies—especially the earth.

“And now, Doctor, I am prepared to demonstrate to the world that this gnostic wisdom was stolen by the ecclesiasts from which to construct their fabulous Bible, prepara-

tory to its exploitation of its hypocritical christian enterprise. A ranker fraud was never perpetrated by men, because it deprived mankind at large of education.

"I have never shown you to what extent I have delved into this christian myth. It is sufficient for me to say, that the whole scheme of plagiarism is revealed by a select ecclesiastical code, only intended for the knowledge of the inner clique.

"Jesus said to his disciples:

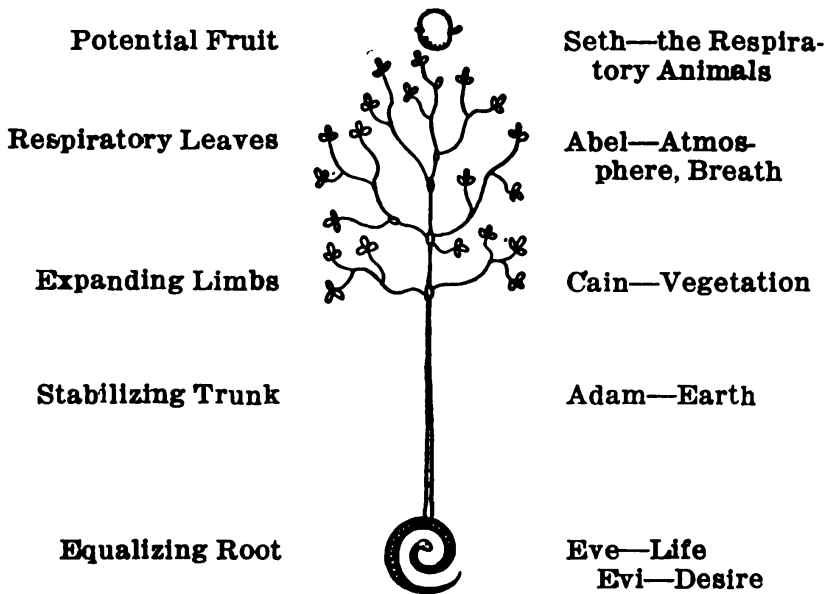
" 'Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God; but unto them that are without all these things are done in parables' (Mark 4:11).

"A parable is a form of concealment.

"I have a big surprise for you, Doctor. It is my interpretation of the Genesisic creation of man on earth by the ecclesiastic code.

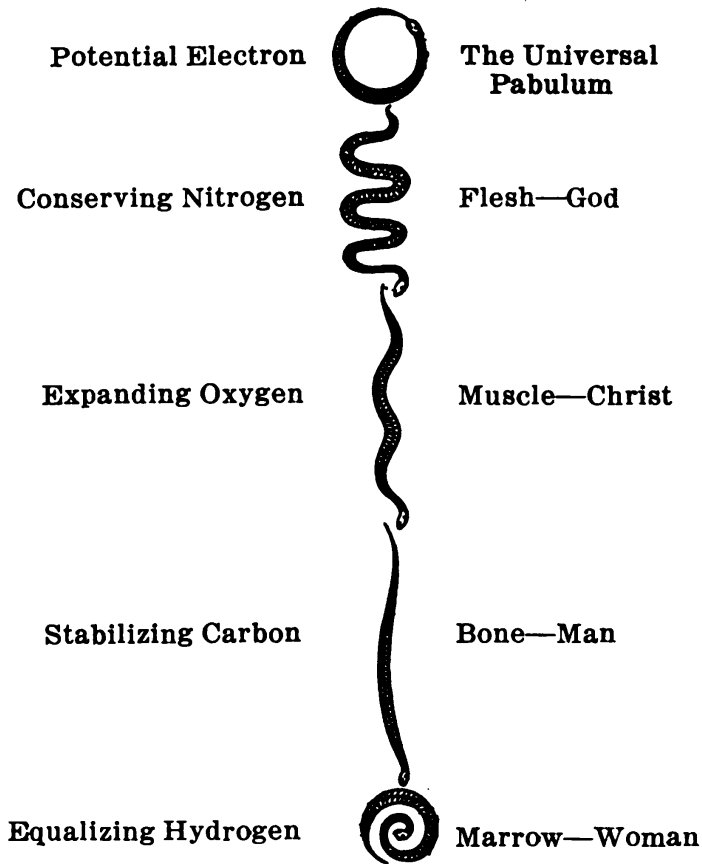
"First it is likened to a tree.

" 'To Seth was born a son Enos' (Gen. 4:26). Mortal man, subject to fall.



*Read from the spiral upward*

*Read from the electron downward*



“The tree is the ‘earthy Adam’—the waves are the ‘Lord from heaven.’

“‘How be it that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural, and afterward that which is spiritual.

“‘The first man is of the earth earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven’ (1 Cor. 15:46, 47).

“Now, Doctor, here is positive evidence of fabrication. They reversed the two sets of waves, putting the negative waves first, and the positive, or creative waves last, in order to separate the common mortal which is a part of vegetation, or earthy creation, and make the priesthood a special dispensation.

“Do you now understand why they so strenuously antagonize evolution?



"Do you now understand why, in the code, they liken producing humanity to the earth? The code gives to the earth the meaning, the producer, and to mankind the same meaning.

"The first man was forbidden to partake of the second tree, which means eternal life, and universal wisdom, and here is the reason; this knowledge would reveal to man that he was evolved out of the respiratory animals.

"Look at this code, Doctor:

"*Enos* means mortal man, subject to temptation and fall. Thus is revealed that the submersion of mankind, in sin and evil, was a premeditated thing, for which every priest in christendom should be put up against a wall and shot, or burned at the stake, as they burned about fifty million innocent persons during their previous harvest, the inquisition.

"Can you grasp the horror of this murderous system?

"The first fall of man is symbolized by the falling apple. *Enos* the earthy man hanging upon a tree.

"The first resurrection, is the rising up of a new tree.

"Now don't begin to cuss and throw things, Doctor, when you fully grasp the contemptible attitude assumed by this damned priesthood which conspired to eliminate the common masses of humanity from a participation in the natural rights, privileges and gifts intended for all men alike, that the few might pose as dirty, indolent, non-productive, vulgar gods on earth.

"Who are they?

"Behold the man is become as one of *us*; and now lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever.

"Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden.'

"Who are '*us*.' The priesthood, of course.

"The garden' is a place of cultivation.

"This refers to the suppression of gnosticism, and the casting of the masses of mankind into the darkness of ignorance, the 'dark ages' (486 to 1495).

"Sowing means a harvest at the end of a period, and we are bluntly told:

" 'The field is the world; the good seeds are the children of the church; but the tares are the children of the wicked—those not of the church.

" 'The enemy that sowed them was the devil; the harvest is the end of the world, and the reapers are the angels (agents of the inquisition).

" 'As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world.

" 'The son of man shall send forth his angels and they shall gather out of his *kingdom* all things that *offend*.

" 'And shall cast them into a furnace of fire. There shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth' (Matt. 13).

"As we have previously been told in the Bible, God himself sent the devil into the world to tempt and corrupt it.

"Once they pulled off this dreadful human harvest, murdering fifty million people. Right now the second harvest, the second thousand years, is at hand, and humanity is being trained for another slaughter, and the law is the two-edged sword.

"Mind what I tell you, Doctor, right now, in the United States, the people are being systematically legislated into crime to bring all into a net. The nation is being taxed into poverty, and frightened into insanity, in preparation for the next harvest. We are now living under inquisitional restraints and irritations. Fear is being shot into humanity, and another bloody end is near. The 'son of man,' the pope, is selected to carry out this scheme. Jesus declares this was premeditated.

" 'Think not that I am come to send peace on earth; I came not to send peace, but a sword.

" 'A man's foes shall be they of his own household' (Matt 10:34, 36."

"That is a sad picture you have painted, Grub. I am shocked at some of the revelations you make, yet I must confess they seem logical and reasonable. I should like to study

these diagrams." And the Doctor reached for some of Grub's manuscript. "Let's see. By an analysis of this wave system, I understand we may follow these waves from a beginning to a culmination, because of their consecutive continuity. That, in my mind, is your greatest revelation."

"No, Doctor," said Grub. "My most important discovery is, that it is of gnostic origin, and that the christian promoters confiscated it—usurped it is better. And we find reference to the system throughout the Bible. This insidious practice originally had a sinister motive, which it has ever since striven to culminate."

"Well, insofar as modern knowledge of your wave theory is concerned, you may be named its discoverer," replied the Doctor.

"I am willing to leave that to public opinion, but I shall claim the honor of having exposed the raw fact, that the whole christian scheme is based upon the traditional gnostic system, which fact they have attempted to conceal from mankind for mean, selfish ends and purposes," emphatically declared Grub.

"That is doubtless true," replied the Doctor. "But I want to understand these diagrams more clearly. You seem to demonstrate here, that, while the vegetation is earthy, to the extent that it is attached to the earth, still the tree is used to symbolize both vegetable and animals."

"Ah, that is a good point, Doctor. The tree is used in the ecclesiastical plagiarism to represent all life below the priesthood as earthy. That is why you find the code meaning of Adam is earthy, and that of common mankind as the producing earth. *Earth* means *the producer*. Man proper is undoubtedly a planetary image. His whole physical and organic being reflects a composite picture of the planetary system. Doubtless this is where the ecclesiasts conceived the idea of the second Adam being made in the 'image and likeness' of God in heaven, thereby promoting the priesthood above the producing masses. This is born out by the fact that the church has never looked upon the common people as other

than a means of support and promotion. It purposely crushed the people into a plastic mass as a militant body, whereas it left the priesthood a unit system, bound together by individual oath."

"Yes, I can clearly vision man as a tree reversed," replied the Doctor. "Where the tree draws nourishment direct from the elements of the earth, it repays the earth with its dead excrements. Whereas, man draws his nourishment from the atmosphere, in the sense of the living fruits being produced in the air. He, in turn, gives his waste excrements to the earth for the benefit of vegetation.

"Man's detachment from the earth gives him freedom which the vegetation does not enjoy, and an orbit of his own, which guarantees to him a wide exercise of selectivity, if not interfered with."

"There is a good illustration of our wave theory in this. Moreover, it secretly reveals why the mob, as distinguished from the priesthood, is earthy. I will demonstrate this," continued Grub.

"We know the earth symbolizes the spiral culmination of the primary set of waves originating in the electron.

"We have seen the tree rising out of the spiral and executing the secondary set of waves, culminating in the globular fruit.

"We now find the system of animal nourishment arising in this globular fruit and executing the waves back to the spiral, as revealed by the animal excrement.

"You will at once recognize this last process as a secondary, positive set of waves, as distinguished from the original or primitive set.

"The priesthood is the personification of the primitive set of waves, and earthy man is represented by the secondary set of waves.

"In the scheme of nature the higher creations live off the lower. Doubtless this is the principle upon which the priesthood was founded, and now is supported.

“If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we reap your carnal things?” (1 Cor. 9:11).

“Now the primary set of waves only can represent the sowing of spiritual seeds. While all men, including priests, represent the propagation of an animal species, therefor, all men are born in the same class, and equal.”

“That does not substantiate the theory that the gospels are the gift of God. I’m beginning to absorb your antipathy for the church tommy-rot, Grub,” said the Doctor. “How does it occur that God only deals with humanity at large through a select few, if his blessings are free to all men alike?” And the Doctor pushed the manuscript away.

“Doctor, in my opinion, the impudent pretense of a select few, assuming to have been especially chosen to insolently dictate the conduct of the balance of the human race, is the most profane attitude ever assumed by men. There is not one single thing in nature to justify the ecclesiastical usurpation.

“Now, add to this the mean, dissolute, vulgar, and intemperate priestly life, and you queer the whole civilizing structure, because of catering to and coddling this usurpative thing,” and Grub arose in his excitement, bundled up his manuscript, and replaced them in his cabinet.

“Just a moment, Grub,” said the Doctor. “At a suitable time I wish you would attempt to make clear the part that the Greek, Egyptian and Roman mythology has been merged into the christian scheme.”

## CHAPTER XIII

"Doctor, I've been digging. Do I look mussed up?" said Grub.

"What's the joke, boy? It seems to me you are always digging," replied the Doctor.

"Well, I have uncovered about the biggest joke in the christian scheme," said Grub. "They surely understood the importance of rendering the masses of people ignorant before they began to throw things about.

"Doctor, did you ever look up the significance of that mysterious ecclesiastic joker, the word *Abracadabra*?"

"No, I have never had occasion to do so," replied the Doctor.

"I bumped into it while interpreting the names associated with the name Jesus," said Grub. "Let me enlighten you.

"The evidences of wilful plagiarisms by the ecclesiasts are amazingly clear.

"In Mithraism—the religion taught by Zoroaster, *Mithra* means the sunlight, and stands in the same relation to *Ormug*, the supreme sun, as in christianity Christ the sun of righteousness, stands to God the father.

"The christian schemers appropriated and concealed *Mithra* in the name *Abraxas*, the root word of *Abracadabra*. This was proven by the discovery that the word *Abraxas* had identically the same mathematical value as *Mithra*, 365, and had the same significance = the morning sun light. Ab-ra-ca-da-b-ra.

"*Ab* = father, *ra* = the sun, *ca* = the Lord of light, *da* = brilliant, *b* = breath, *ra* = the sun.

"This conceals:

"The father, the son, and the holy ghost, all in God.

"This is but another 'brilliant' fake to cover up the fact that christianity is but a clumsy imitation of the Chinese, Persian and Egyptian sun-worship, poorly concealed in personifications, and symbolism.

"I am going to give you some surprises in my exposure of the alleged 'immaculate' birth of Jesus.

"Zacharias was the high priest of the temple where Mary was raised up from a child.

"Quoting from *Waite*: 'When Mary was twelve years old she received her food from a virgin priest, and the priests met in consultation to determine what to do with her.'

"The face of the church was in grave danger, so they tried to put Mary onto an old man, Joseph, but he declined.

"They assured Joseph the young girl was with child by the holy-ghost, and they insisted upon his taking her from the church which he did. Now Joseph means increasing humanity, and Mary means rebellion.

"'Upon Joseph finding her with child, he was going to put her away, when an angel, a priest, appeared and dissuaded him from it, thereby glorifying God.

"'Mary protested her innocence, saying, she knew not how it occurred.'

"Here is the contemptible attitude of the church when caught red-handed.

"'Joseph was brought before the priest and accused of having violated her virginity, and was acquitted upon drinking holy-water.' Merely a bluff to give the impression that the church knew nothing of it.

"But, when we refer back to the time of Noah, when the re-peopling of the earth began, we find positive evidence that this 'immaculate conception' thing was premeditated from the beginning. The first-born son of Shem was Elam. *Elam* means a young priest, a virgin, a secret, and an age or epoch.

"It was a hundred years after the alleged crucifixion of Christ, before the 'immaculate conception' fake was suggested, and it was not fully canonized until the middle of the nineteenth century.

"David means carnal love, and he is named the father of Jesus Christ (Matt. 1:1). Nevertheless, when David debauched the wife of Uriah, and she bore him a bastard child, to save the face of the church God killed the child and for-

gave David, but David killed Uriah, and took Bathshua, his wife, as a concubine (2 Sam. 12:9).

"*Uriah* means light, intellect, education.

"*Bathshua* is Bathsheba.

"*Bathshua* means the oath of wealth.

"*Bathsheba* means the daughter of an oath.

"*Daughter* means posterity.

" 'There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a certain priest, named Zacharias, of the course of *Abia*; and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth' (Luke 1:5).

"*Herod* means heroic.

"*Juda* means approval.

"*Abia* means the Lord is my father.

"*Abi* means posterity.


"*Zacharias* means mindful of the Lord.

"*Aaron* means enlightenment.

"*Elisabeth* means God hath sworn, the oath of God.

"Let us see who old Zach really is. He was the juggler in the 'immaculate conception' trick, so clearly revealed in the foregoing.

"Z is a gnostic symbol associated with the 'subtle' serpent symbolizing the all-seeing, progressive wisdom, omnipotence, the father, looking both ways.

"*Zeus* means the omnipotent father, and he is pictured as riding upon a zig-zag serpent  which is none other than our nitrogen wave.

"Z also represents the zig-zag flash of lightning.

"In the Greek, Z is *Zeta* meaning a flame of fire, of the resplendent A, meaning the primal cause.

"Undoubtedly having reference to the sun.

"The Hebrew Z, is *Zayin*, meaning a flame of fire.

"*Zas* is the Chinese sun-god.

"The *ch* in *Zach* is an abbreviated form of Jah or Jehovah.

"*Ar* means watching, uncovered.



"*Iah* or *ias* has a masculine significance. Zacharias or *ias* is the son of Barachias, meaning thunder. Barach, or Barak, means lightning.

"*Mary* is derived from *mer*, *mere*, meaning the sea. She is named queen of the sea.

"The great *abyss*, 'the coiled mother serpent of unrevealed wisdom' dwelt in the primeval ocean. This, Doctor, is our spiral.

"'Darkness was upon the face of the deep and the spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters' (Gen. 1:2).

"*Darkness* means ignorance.

"*Waters* mean the multitudes of people.

"The ignorant masses have been wholly enthralled by the sentimental fable of the virgin Mary. In the dark ages half idiotic, so-called knights, would drop upon their knees at the sight of a roadside shrine, to give the impression that they were deeply religious, then they would reap a harvest of blood, killing innocent women and children, and bring home the spoils to the church. The crusades were inspired plundering expeditions for gain.

"The miserable peasants, in like manner, would wallow in the dust before these shrines, fearing some treacherous priest might see them did they pass them by.

"Little did they know, that, when they gurgled their *Ave Maria*, with heart breaking sobs, they were exclaiming 'hail rebellion.'

"*Mary* means rebellion.

"The fake virgin Mary is designated by the catholic church, 'our lady of wisdom,' and she stands as a symbol of the church. She is also named the water-mother, which enables us to grasp the hidden significance of the word virgin. It is our gnostic spiral.

"'And Adam called his wife's name *Eve*; because she was the mother of all living' (Gen. 3:20).

"*Adam* means the earth or earthy.

"*Eve* means life, motion, the sea.

"Here is another secret reference to the suppression of intellect.

"Light is life, and life is intelligence.

"The withdrawal of life from the waters, means the withdrawal of light, intellect, from the people, for waters mean the multitudes of people—another suggestion of the classing of the masses with the ignorant vegetation.

"There is hardly a nation, whose history has come down to us, that does not record, ages in advance of the christian scheme, the existence of a savior God born of an 'immaculate virgin' and not infrequently this virgin mother is named *Maria*, *Mere*, or an equivalent word meaning the sea.

"*Dionysos* was born of the virgin Myrrha.

"*Hermes*, the Logos or word of the Greeks, was born of the virgin Myrrha, or Maia.

"The mother of the Siamese savior was called Maya Mariah.

"The Chinese savior sun-god, Zas, was virgin born.

"All of these virgin mothers are resolved back into *mer*, *mere*, *mare*, the sea.

"This truly reveals the great antiquity of the legendary gnostic wisdom, handed down by tradition through long ages of time. It also condemns the church for preaching Jesus Christ literally, and him crucified. This cruel hoax has torn the heart out of humanity, all these centuries, for the profit it yielded to the grafting priesthood. 'Weaken your victim before you plunder him.'

"Another convicting accusation of wilful fraud, and false-pretense, is found in the fact that all these previous 'immaculately born' things were born at twelve o'clock midnight of December 24-25, and this includes the Chinese savior, and the christian Jesus.

"So much for Mary, rebellion; let us get acquainted with the old man upon whom 'Zach' tried to put the sin of the priesthood.

"In a righteous pretense of ignorance, the high-priest accused Joseph of outraging Mary, after they had found her

in trouble in the temple. But this was all premeditated, and was fixed up.

"Were this not all a mere figurative false-pretense, it would, indeed, brand the church as a deceitful and dishonest thing.

"As I have previously shown:

"*Jesus* is but the Greek form of the name Joshua. But, where *Joshua*, the savior of the Jews, means increased wealth, *Jesus*, increased church following, means joy and prosperity for the church.

"*Jo* means increased, *shua* means wealth.

"*Je* means the ever-existent light, and *sus* means joy, prosperity, sustenance. The word *sow* is derived from the same root.

"*Joseph*, upon whom the church thrust the rebellious Mary, against his protest, analyzes, *Jo* means increase, *sephor* numbers.

"Increasing humanity was forced to carry the burden of fathering and feeding the bastard priesthood, and supporting the church.

"Fat-bellied priests have posed as cunning little Jesuses through the centuries, and smeared their soft hands over women in the confessional.

"Now, Doctor, this hypocrisy, and false-pretense, is clearly exposed. We recognize the 'immaculate conception' as the priesthood, born of the church, and fathered and fattened by slaving humanity, through a form of mental coercion called religion.

"This is why Joseph could only be called a foster-father. To foster means to nurse.

"Back in Genesis we find this explanation of Joseph having been sent into Egypt, meaning oppression and misery.

"Joseph says unto his brethren:

"'God sent me before you to preserve you a posterity in the earth' (Gen. 45:7).

"*Posterity* means a hereditary line of official priests.

"*Earth* means producing humanity.

"Merely to call your attention to it, Doctor, while I was digging at this stuff, I found a remarkable reminder that the gnostic wisdom and system covered the whole earth.

"The *Snake* Indians of Arizona (Horizona) are called the *Hopii*, or *Opii*, which doubtless is cognate with the Greek *Ophis*, or *Opis*, which again must originally have been the Greek *Apop* or *Apep*. There is also a resemblance in the Egyptian *Apappus*, meaning a giant; also in the Roman *Appii*.

"*Apep* is the Egyptian name for the great serpent slain by *Horas*, the sun of day in the Egyptian mythology. They have an astonishing symbol among the Indian tribes—a circular serpent with its tail in its mouth, and running through the body a fine wave corresponding with our nitrogen wave—unborn, a symbol of our electron.

"The meaning of this symbol is 'universal union,' to circle the earth.

"The word *Arizona*, or *Horizona*, undoubtedly is derived from the Egyptian *Horus*, and the symbol form the original gnosticism.

"Where did these American Indians get them? The oldest continuously occupied town in the United States, is the pueblo *Acoma*, *Ac* = mighty, *om* = sun, *a* = first cause.

"I also found another evidence of ecclesiastic imitation.

"The modern bride's shower of gifts comes from the legend of Zeus, reaching the imprisoned *Danaë*, in the guise of a 'golden shower.'

"At the present day, the Romanian virgin-bride approaches the church altar in a bridal vail composed of showering golden threads.

"In the *Assumpta Maria* of Francis Thompson, the virgin bride, Mary, is identified with *Danaë*.

Zeus at *Dodo-na*, means *Dad*—the one father. *David* means *Dodo*, carnal love, and in Matt. 1:1 David is named the father of Jesus Christ.

"All these things condemn the christian idea of the 'immaculate conception,' as the most vulgar, impudent and un-

natural suggestion to be found in the whole Bible, and the preaching of Jesus literally, and him crucified, is a rank fraud."

"I must confess, Grub, you have perfected your case," said the Doctor. "I am not immune against conviction by your remarkably clear demonstrations, but I am skeptical about any revelation, be it ever so rank an exposure, being able to arouse the greater masses of people from a state of dumb indifference.

"The promoters of christianity know the terrors of revealed error; they having committed endless errors from the beginning of their enterprise. They arbitrarily deny the possibility of error on their part, on the dishonest pretense that they are, in some mysterious manner, rendered immune against all legal restraints, and all the laws of nature.

"Every man quickly admits that it is human to err; but few men are willing to confess error on their own part—no man will accuse himself without coercion. So serious a matter is this, that nations insert in their law codes provision against the forcing of men to testify against themselves. Nevertheless, bigoted police officials, criminally violate this, all over this country, in applying their 'third degree' to accused persons, a crime in itself more vicious than the crime usually charged against the accused. The utter disregard for law on the part of over-zealous officials is an imitation of the ecclesiastic bigotry, and a feature of the inquisition.

"The habit of self-protection, due to fear of persecution, is the stumbling block in the path of self-correction, and mass reformation. It is unconscious habit, as well as conscious practice, a form of cultivated mental dishonesty, used as a protecting cloak, and justified by long and universal practice, and custom.

"Another vicious institution is the confessional, which shields as much crime, probably, as the law uncovers and punishes.

"Habit is a tyrant which few can conquer.

"Back in the centuries the French nation practiced a

most cruel slave or criminal system in which the chain became a decoration. Upon becoming immune to conscious insult the slaves became indifferent to their degradation. It became a mental and physical habit to a degree that they preferred the condition to freedom.

"How loth are the papists to surrender their antique and apish religious habits and practices, because of an habitual fear of being accused of error. They have an absolute fear to show habits and customs of modern life in the open.

"It required centuries to train the wild Irish and Scotch tribes away from their monotonous existence in their mountain seclusion, where they lived upon the most meager and primitive food, and to this day the cruder classes prefer to slip back to the original jargon and personal habits.

"The kings of Fez, by long training, brought their vassals under such an habitual form of slavery it became a semi-religious fanaticism, and they were ready and willing to come before their kings and submit to having their brains beaten out, for sacrifice or punishment, without protest.

"Now, you will see my purpose in delivering to you this lecture on error and habit. The ecclesiasts have always known these underlying laws, and they have trained their militant mobs into a state of innocuous desuetude, insofar as religious beliefs are concerned.

"It rules the mob through habitual and mechanical custom, and a cruel and oppressive mental suppression which subjugates both mind and body.

"Long endurance begets abject indifference toward the cause.

"Long-suppressed fear begets a morbid desire to remain in one somnolent condition, rather than risk a worse condition. No thought of betterment inspires hope.

"Those who have formed the habit of patient endurance feel no urgent desire to forsake a long-established oppression which bars their way to happiness and individual comforts.

"To persuade a people, thus chained, to change their habits, is practically impossible, because, like the moribund

muscle, rendered useless by long disuse, there is a mental lesion which prevents a return to those early contacts which begat a desire for better living conditions. Hope dies. The fire of long persecution has left the carbon but a lump of charcoal, which cannot be restored to its pristine state. It must await the day of dissolution of death and decay.

"The violent writhings and workings of maggots in a putrifying body give no clue to the inner condition of the individual worm. No more can we divine the thoughts of the individual man, in the writhing mass of humanity, deprived of initiative individuality under the rash despotism of organized fanaticism, bent only upon constructing about itself a plastic mass, a protecting militant mob, out of which has been systematically cultivated all initiative reasoning power. Behind this wall is concealed the individual priesthood, swathed in luxuries, soothed by complacent leisure.

"The militant mob is immune against being persuaded away from an attachment born of bigoted training. It has no consecutive thought of its own, and it knows nothing of reason. It is trained to resent accusation of error.

"When we examine the art of the church, we see only the most disgusting suggestion of utter self abandon; collapsed bodies; open mouths; staring, scared eyes; hopeless abandon and misery are pictured, to tear the human heart, and to suppress individual hope and courage.

"This is a natural attitude of mental stress.

"Despair is the last attitude of those whose souls have been lashed into submission by cultivated hysteria.

"This is the decorated wall which stands between the church and exposure. As long as this wall of dumb obedience, and blind indifference stands, just that long will the church continue to live, thrive and fatten off humanity.

"When the church can no longer maintain this position of protecting security, it is ever prepared to turn and rend its own ignorant masses, as it has done before, and useless humanity will be slaughtered without the slightest compunction of conscience.

"Remember the 'Massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day' in Paris.

"Organization is the protecting wall of the church.

"Disorder, mixture and confusion, leave humanity a putrifying mass of writhing maggots."



## CHAPTER XIV

: Grub was a little late in keeping the morning engagement. He came hurriedly into the library and began to apologize.

The Doctor laughed, saying, "No apologies; I'm quite well entertained," and he held up a copy of "Martin's Human Body." "I'm going to deliver a brief lecture right here in the library this morning, to avoid the necessity for going to night school to polish up on physiology.

"While I do not believe it wise for us to attempt to vindicate or to disprove our standard educational works, I do believe we should consult these subjects to compare our work with them. We could not dispense with what science has established as truth. The foundations of our astronomy, chemistry and physiology are too firmly established for us not to depend upon them for verification of the truth of our own work. They long antedate the flimsy, whimsical christian nonsense.

"When I took up this book I was shocked to find how much I had forgotten through disuse. One may soon blur their early learning by neglecting their school-day studies, to stuff the brain with entertaining frivolities. I find I must go back to my old text-books to find some of the materials for our work this morning.

"Here it is, Grub, and it has to do with the elements in the study of physiology which enter into our research—the human anatomy, our physical structures, organs, nervous system, and our mentation. It is a tremendous subject in itself. I have been trying to simplify it by the application of your series of primary waves. I am amazed to what extent they reveal organic processes."

"Are you studying the human body as a special dispensation, or as an image and likeness of our planetary system," asked Grub.

"I have not arrived at that point yet," replied the Doctor.

"Well, did it ever occur to you, Doctor, that the christian God, in making his clay man, gave him no organs?" And Grub laughed. "He just blew him full of air, like a toy balloon. It does not say it was hot air, but observation has corrected that default, and while we are on this subject, do you realize that when God put Adam to sleep, to steal one of his ribs, he never awakened him?"

"Moreover, if the man Adam was made in the image and likeness of God, and was merely made of mud and air, does not that make of God the same kind of creature? But God would surely blush for shame could he vision some of the ugly mugs called men here on earth now."

"Well, I guess you are quite right, but don't lead me away from my purpose," said the Doctor.

"I have been studying the human body and its sensations. We must admit our experiences come under sensation.

"The physical divisions of the human body are very well identified with their special functions, and, moreover, it is curious how they correspond with your wave continuity.

"Let us first examine the head. It fitly symbolizes the position of the potential electron, out of which all else is born in the unfoldment of a system.

*"Form, more or less globular.*

*"Protection, skull, skin, hair, teeth.*

*"Features, exposed face and organs, expressing life.*

*"Special sense organs, eyes, ears, nostrils, mouth.*

*"Special senses, seeing, hearing, smelling, tasting.*

"These organs, and these functions, have a far greater significance than we commonly attribute to them, proving that we are created for a greater purpose than to merely reproduce, and feed our faces.

"The basic sensations largely dependent upon the head.

"These are physical, and due to temperature and pressure:

"Pain.

"Pleasure.

"Anger.

"Hunger.

"Thirst.

"Nausea.

"Satiety.

"Fatigue.

"Rest.

"Recuperation.

*"External contacts of special sense organs:*

*"Eye excited by etheric vibrations.*

*"Ear excited by electric vibrations.*

*"Nose excited by chemical action.*

*"Mouth excited by muscular action.*

*"Skin excited by variations of temperature, contact and pressure.*

"All of our sensations therefore are but modifications of one primary consciousness.

"The head is the seat of reason and sensation, therefore, it is the censor of the body. Upon a careful examination we find this is amazingly true. We give too little thought to such vital matters.

"All of the commonly recognized nourishments of the body are first submitted to the inspection of the head before being passed on into our body for assimilation. We quickly observe that your waves become the guides.

"The vibratory absorption through the eye and ear to nourish our brain and nervous system.

"The gaseous for respiration through the nostrils.

"The solid, through our mouth to nourish our tissues.

"The fluid through our mouth to maintain circulation.

"Do you see how wonderfully it adjusts itself to the system of waves. Look:

"Truly  $\text{NOCH} = 43$  is an inspired formula, and the primary plasmic cell, in which resides the first spark of embodied life, and I believe it is the carrier of all potential wisdom."

"Did I understand you to say you found all this in a text-book?" asked Grub.



|               |           |             |              |             |
|---------------|-----------|-------------|--------------|-------------|
| Impulse       | Vibratory | Gaseous     | Solid        | Fluid       |
| Nerves        | Flesh     | Muscles     | Bones        | Marrow      |
| Will          | Sensation | Action      | Stability    | Circulation |
| Adjustment    | Cold      | Warm        | Dry          | Moist       |
| Consciousness | Seeing    | Hearing     | Tasting      | Smelling    |
| Assimilation  | Selection | Acquisition | Distribution | Digestion   |

"I should say not," replied the Doctor.

"I have not completed the process. Wait.

"After digestion we must expect an elimination of the excrements.

"It is manifest that the acquisition of substances, if they may be named substances, by the eye and ear, must be promptly absorbed into the medullary matter of the brain and nervous system as nourishment, therefore this elimination must be expressed through speech and physical action, and right here we have a great problem ready to unfold.

"Every system must contribute nourishment to that which supplies it with food.

"Every system produces a living excrement, its fruit, and a dead excrement, its waste—life aspires upward, death drops downward.

"The mental process follows this identical law. Speech, and its equivalent, is the living fruit of mentation, and it is the contribution our mentation returns to the universal store of wisdom.

"Vital energy is the spent production of mentation, and it is deposited in the earth, the body, to fertilize the tissues and give the body physical action to enable it to seek material nourishment as well as carry us to vantage points for the replenishment of our mental larder.

"Now, Grub, I believe I have helped, some, toward identifying our contact with the universal pabulum, and it is all that you have believed it to be.

"Selectivity is a living fact. We subconsciously select from a pabulum, all that may be known by living, physical

bodies, the materials essential to our requirements, and we repay the debt by our mental eliminations, and we compel the physical body to repay the earth for the material things taken from it, gaseous, solid and fluid.

"Do you now recognize Canaan, the son of Ham, the servant of Shem and Japheth? Merchandising and trading in the marts of nature.

"This is the basis for that impudent assumption that the priesthood is entitled to our material products in exchange for their fraudulent spiritual things. They pose as gods breathing upon the common herd the universal breath.

"The mechanical process of elimination is very plain.

"While we undoubtedly exhale our thoughts into the atmosphere, with every breath we breathe, I believe that the law of selectivity chooses that which is worthy to pass into the great universal mind, and all worthless thoughts fall back to the earth to be absorbed and destroyed, as we, in like manner, select our nourishment.

"The quality of our thoughts depends upon our mental nourishment; how important therefore is it that we seek and select only that which inspires the best quality of thought.

"This enables us to realize the awful crime of submerging humanity in gross ignorance.

"It is a self-evident fact, that, if we are impoverished to a wage only sufficient to keep body and soul together, we cannot contribute nourishment to others. The same identical law applies to mental starvation. If the people are bound in ignorance, they can contribute nothing towards the intellect of others. If they are bound in poverty, they cannot 'buy wisdom.'

"Exhalation from the lungs also sends forth, as an excrement, *carbon dioxide*. This is the gaseous excrement from the thorax. I believe this element carries unspoken thought into the atmosphere to be absorbed by vegetation. The vegetation inhales *carbon dioxide* through its leaves. This reciprocity between the respiratory animals, and the vegetation, is symbolized by *Seth*, meaning compensation. Moreover,

this breath of vegetation is symbolized by *Abel*, meaning breath. As we inhale our inspiration from the original source, vegetation inhales our exhalation.

"This is a most instructive subject, Grub. It is a perfect demonstration of action and reaction. Moreover, it proves the cyclic process in nature. Our breath is planetary. The breath of vegetation is earthy.

"The respiration of animals is a positive process, drawing its breath from universal sources, whereas the respiration of vegetation is a reactive process, carrying the excrement product of animal respiration back to the earth.

"Hence, God exclaims to *Cain*, vegetation, 'The voice of thy brother's blood crieth unto me from the ground' (Gen. 4:10).

"This means the oxygen carried into the earth through the inspiration of the vegetation.

"This Bible stuff proves, conclusively, that ecclesiasticism did have a full knowledge of the gnostic wisdom.

"Oxygen is the most widely distributed and most active, of the four primary elements. It constitutes one-fifth of our atmosphere; eight-ninths of our water, and one-half the hard crust of the earth; hence it well represents the blood so widely distributed throughout our own bodies. The accusation against Cain is a vicious assault upon an absolutely essential process in nature, and reflects to the discredit of Christian ideas.

"We may at once see the fallacy of the christian personifications. Oxygen is the chemical symbol of Christ, who is sent into the earth to mingle with the earthy elements. In the vegetation he rises up as a living, breathing thing, embodied in a material form which binds him to the tree. This is a form of crucifixion. Not until he appears in the form of the respiratory animals does he receive the 'holy-ghost,' or breathe the pure atmosphere. *Holy-ghost* means breath.

"The first birth is of the water, the second birth is of the spirit.

“‘Except a man be born again he cannot see the kingdom of God’ (John 3:3).

“‘Except a man be born of water and of the spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.’ Now, the kingdom of God is the living things of the earth, and God is man.

“Jesus himself declares:

“‘Is it not written in your law, I said ye are gods?’ (John 10:34).

“But, the ‘God of all gods’ is of heaven.

“He is ever existent; hence he is above the men gods of the earth.

“‘A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven’ (John 3:27).

“‘He that cometh from above is above all; he that is of the earth is earthy’ (Jno. 3:31).

“Can you see why man was named the *earth*, meaning producing mankind?

“This man was only a god in the sense that he controlled the productive things of the earth—‘the fish of the sea, the fowl of the air, and the beast of the fields’ (Gen. 2:28)

“Who then is that great and mighty God of all? Why, he’s the wise guy who conceived and worked out this christian scheme.

“*Heaven* means ecclesiastical government.

“He appropriates the atmosphere as his place of abode, and the common herd are bound to toil and misery on the earth.

“That this was a premeditated thing is evidenced by the following:

“‘Thus saith the Lord, the heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool’ (Is. 66:1).

“The fatal error made by the ecclesiasts was, that, it did not destroy its secret code. It classes the common masses with the lower animals, with the earth as their place of residence, hence man is ‘of the earth earthy.’

“It classes the priesthood as of heavenly origin, from

whence come the pristine elements, the spiritual — breath. Hence, as the 'son of God' the 'immaculate' Jesus, is but the oxygen element in the primitive creative wave passing into the earthy body to rise as the 'son of man.' Its residence in the atmosphere is symbolized by the 'Garden of Eden' which means a place for cultivation. The *atmosphere* means a surrounding of special deportment, an air of refinement, mien and godly austerity.

"If there is any doubt about this meaning the priesthood, and that it was not intended that the common man should indulge in education and refinement, this will make it clear.

"Behold, the man is become as *one of us*, to know good and evil; and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever:—therefore, the Lord God sent him forth from the Garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken' (Gen. 3:22, 23).

"This tree of wisdom' is the the traditional gnostic wisdom, which taught that enlightenment, knowledge, understanding and education, place men in contact with the universal mentation, and create an essenic eternal existence.

"I have extended my lecture longer than I expected, but while we are on this particular subject it is better to finish it while it is fresh in our minds.

"We have examined the excretions of the head and thorax.

"The abdomen eliminates the solid wastes produced by digestion.

"The pelvic organs eliminate the fluid excrements, hence it also is the seat of reproduction.

"The whole process of elimination adjusts itself to our waves, which again become our guide for tracing mysterious processes, revealing a continuity of physical and organic action.

"There is a natural law compelling all systems requiring nourishment to cultivate those things upon which they depend for support. It is a system of compensation, of which respiration is the plainest example.





|         |        |             |           |             |
|---------|--------|-------------|-----------|-------------|
| Head    | Face   | Thorax      | Abdomen   | Pelvis      |
| Brain   | Tongue | Lungs       | Stomach   | Kidneys     |
| Thought | Speech | Respiration | Digestion | Elimination |

"Source, kind, attraction and repulsion cover the process of nourishment.

"We will advance what seems to be a logical proposition.

"If the universal pabulum carries a potential wisdom, it must necessarily derive this from some logical source, and it must be of a character suitable to be assimilated by the bodies absorbing it.

"To seek and absorb this wisdom intimates understanding—wisdom converted into available knowledge.

"Nature undoubtedly creates her physical organic creatures for some logical purpose, the greatest purpose being to express her potential wisdom in understandable forms. These forms are reflected into the great unembodied mentation as permanent images, to be revealed as useful knowledge, as we systematically produce and store away excess food, to be drawn upon as necessity requires. Nature thus stores in her potential bin excess wisdom for her living creatures to draw upon according to their natural ability, and these living bodies are cultivated to bear fruits and pay tribute, to replenish the store of universal wisdom, like attracting like. Hence, it is possible that vegetation inhales its inspiration from animal expiration.

"The psychic eliminant of the human brain is our contribution to the store of universal wisdom. We may, by concentration and mental desire, draw upon that endless supply and convert the potential wisdom into practical knowledge for useful purposes.

"It is not a matter of human whim, or official dispensation. We must partake of the tree of life and wisdom, and

contribute to its support, whether we want to or not, or whether a non-productive priesthood likes it or not. Nature is no respecter of persons. This is the true origin of:

“‘I perceive that God is no respecter of persons’ (Acts 10:34).”

“Moreover, unhampered in our loyalty to nature, we may cultivate our own ‘Garden of Eden,’ because nature endows us with a secret power of thought, reason and deductive analysis, which neither the christian God, nor the Christian devil, can take from us, except by forcing us into a state of ignorance akin to imbecility. No man can build without materials. No man can live without food. No system can survive without constant nourishment and renewal, and all must pay. Nature abhors a beggar.

“When the machine stops production stops. It is the God nature within us which sees, hears, and understands.

“The false and fraudulent doctrines of an individual spirit or soul after death, and the resurrection of the physical body long after death and visible dissolution, are palpably but bribes to deceive innocent humanity. They should be rudely suppressed by law.”

“But, Doctor, how about an essenic state after the death of the body?” asked Grub.

“My boy, you really have guessed the great secret,” softly replied the Doctor. “The mind is not a personality or individuality. *We are already living the essenic life.* It is eternal. We are but temporarily using this material mechanism. When we lay it down we but withdraw from it, as a cumberance no longer essential to nature’s purposes. Hence, the law itself commits a crime against nature by taking human life.

“*We should rejoice at the prospect of being relieved of the dreadful hardships of physical being.* Each living being must fulfill his mission or fall short of fulfilling his cycle, with perhaps dire penalties. Nature quickly removes all useless beings, and this may be the material excrement of physical life.”

"How may we know that we are living the perfect life," asked Grub.

"We are not. There is but one absolute test. Nature originally intended that mankind, its highest created thing upon this earth, should form a conscious, understanding contact with the universal mentation. It was intended that all men should have a thought in common, which would harmonize man with nature's purposes.

"But, an accursed priesthood, bent upon self-glorification, broke all human contact with the universal purpose, and mankind is doomed to live out the remaining period of its allotted time on earth, in oppression, misery, affliction and imbecilic ignorance. The lesion is a physical one which cannot be mended."

"And is there no remedy by which those who know the truth, yet may not correct the error, may soften their own afflictions, and encourage others to live in patient belief the end may alleviate their suffering?" asked Grub.

"We, perhaps, are as near to such a remedy as any living beings, today. It remains to be learned to what extent we may improve our position," softly replied the Doctor.

"Must we consider our task completed," plaintively asked Grub.

"No! No!" exclaimed the Doctor. "We have just begun to live. We have awakened gnosticism, the only hope of humanity, and now we must nurse it back to its former powers with the hope that, possibly, somewhere, concealed in its wisdom, there may be a remedy which may heal the mental lesion which stands between the embodied mentation and the parent universal body of eternal wisdom. Wisdom is interpreted by a living contact which reveals knowledge, and develops understanding. As long as our mentation is housed in its human, physical body, we shall be able to vision or sense forms. Our trance condition is not the condition originally intended by nature, but it demonstrates the possibility of universal contact. Nature originally intended the universal contact should be a waking, a fully conscious

state. In our trance state, we practically suspend contact between our subconscious being and our physical body, thus partially eliminating the physical hindrance. The lesion is in our medullary structures.

"We do not think with our tissues, but we do use our bodies to express our thoughts in forms already created in the universal pabulum. We absorb and digest these as our mental food. Here, again, selectivity is exercised. Our head censors all that enters into our body.

"We must at an early time take up a critical examination of the human brain and nervous system. Although he was a treacherous jesuit, we must not treat lightly Descartes' idea of the rudimentary brain centre which he called a 'third median eye,' for it is the logical point where our lesion should occur. It is in the *pineal gland*, usually called the 'seat of the soul.

"It is an astonishing fact, Grub, that you have been juggling serpents as the revealers of wisdom, and in the serpent, this *pineal gland* is more fully developed than it is in the human brain, and the ecclesiasts named the serpent wisest of all created things.

"We must now rest and trust to inspiration for our tomorrow's work."

"I must confide to you, Doctor, my manifestations are taking a peculiar turn. My pencil insists upon drawing sketches of both astronomical and Biblical things. I think I shall be able to demonstrate this before we complete our work," said Grub.

## CHAPTER XV

The Doctor and Grub passed quickly into their trance condition, finding themselves in Rome.

"It surely is a rusty old town," whispered Grub.

"No one ever attempted to locate a beauty show in Rome," grunted the Doctor.

Cronus now greeted them and took them in hand, saying:

"You are now in the most history-ridden city the world has ever known, a dirty old dump of bunk and junk. There are enough rotting, broken walls here to build a large city, but every broken brick is stamped sacred to some past human error.

"If one-tenth part of the amount spent upon the fickle glorification of Rome, as the seat of ecclesiasticism, had been expended upon the education and promotion of humanity, the world would not now be wallowing in inspired ignorance, insanity and crime.

"Whether patrician or plebe, the Romans, after the time of Constantine, all had about them the odors of the Roman catholic deceit and hypocrisy.

"These vast piles of ruins do not alone register a decaying, material city; they are the tombs of misspent glory, and a fit monument to a degenerate age. When egotism and insanity ruled supreme, and overweening ambition spat in the face of decent earnest efforts to advance human education and understanding of the purposes of civilization.

"Now, Rome is but a junk-pile of the offal and excrements of a system once exploited by a low, vulgar, half-demented priesthood, seeking to establish over developing civilization as a universal, theocratic form of super government, primarily for their own selfish aggrandizement, and the accumulation of great wealth. Today the church stands as the richest organization in the world, all of which has been wheedled and forced out of humanity by devious forms of coercion.

"The most embarrassing thing to ask of a priest is, for him to name, or point out, one single benefit to humanity rendered by the church which could not have been rendered by civil governments at tremendously less sacrifice.

"Concealed behind a mass of plagiarized doctrines, confiscated from all previously known religions, back to the original Chinese sun-god of six thousand years ago, the ecclesia erects about itself high walls to protect it, not only from the intrusion of men, but from the eye of the law.

"All churches are erected as places of refuge, as the Bible names the refuge cities where murderous priests may flee for safety, as Moses fled to Midian when he committed murder.

"Do you ask for visible proof? Look!" and Cronus pointed to an ancient squat building of no great pretensions in point of external architecture.

"The Pantheon!" he exclaimed.

"The name convicts it, signifying, as it does, the tomb of all past religions. The dead husks from which the more attractive doctrines were plagiarized to construct one universal church—the catholic church of Rome.

"*Catholic* means universal.

"*Pan-theon* means all in one.

"*Ecclesia* means government.

"Thus, you see, the fabulous Pantheon, as the name imparts, is the '*Temple of all the Gods*,' which the superstitious follies of fanatical men have feigned, through gross ignorance of the truths which a generous nature intended for all men alike.

"Now the Pantheon is the acknowledged tomb of discarded religious absurdities—the excrement of spent hypocrisy.

"Plastered upon its walls, in chronological jumble, are pictures of the gods of past ages.

"In its gloomy, loud-smelling vaults we find the material evidence that this is the burial place for past and spent religious fakes—the rotting bones of christian bunkum. Here were dumped twenty-eight cartloads of 'bones of the saints'

and here they lie in an unrecognizable mass. Isn't that sufficient to bring contempt upon the christian exploitation?

"Seven hundred years after her alleged time, this rotting tomb was made the last resting place of the 'Virgin Mary,' Pope Boniface IV, dedicating the Pantheon as the christian church of 'Mary and the saints,' and this empty shell became the end of that myth.

"It is a pathetic thing to know that Jesus Christ repudiated the 'virgin Mary' as his mother, and then the priesthood should cast her into a bin of rotting bones.

"But this was not the end of such profanity. In 1623 Pope Urban VIII confiscated the bronze ornaments off the dome of this tomb of the 'mother of God,' to form a canopy over his own sacred altar in St. Peter's."

"Huh!" grunted Grub, "some one will have a heck of a job patching the bones of these saints together, and dragging their souls from beneath the 'altar of God' (Rev. 6:9) and fitting them to these skeletons, on the great day of the final resurrection."

"I can see nothing particularly edifying about this junkpile, Cronus," said the Doctor.

"Quite right," replied Cronus. "Come, we may find the great *Colosseum* more entertaining.

"Oh, I wanted to ask when this bone-dump was erected," put in Grub.

"Allegedly by Agrippa, in the year 27 B. C., but there is such a confusion in dates concerning its origin, even I cannot speak without adding to the mystery," replied Cronus. "But its mythological decorations are undoubtedly intended to assemble all the ancient religions under one roof to suggest a universal church, and, if a church, why not a theocracy? Hence they plagiarized the name *ecclesia*, the name of the legislative body which so cruelly ruled ancient Athens, that by multiple taxation all property was confiscated by the government."

"Huh! That sounds like taxation in the United States," grunted the Doctor. "Maybe the recent suggestion that, in

the event of another war the government should confiscate all property and wealth is an inspired thing, like the finger-printing of all the people. There must be some treacherous conspiracy still lurking back of human government. If these contemptible things should actually be put in force, all men would go mad and run amuck."

"Your remarks are not inconsistent, Doctor. It will not be long before all your people will be made criminals by law," said Cronus (Rom. 3:19).

"But, here we are. What do you think of this old rock-quarry," and Cronus pointed to the vast pile of ruins which once was the Colosseum, in all its glory—'gory' would be a more appropriate word.

"Quarry?" said Grub, looking inquiringly at Cronus.

"I will explain that later," said Cronus.

The vast elliptical amphitheatre yawned before them like the open mouth of a great monster.

"All the written pages in profane history could not relate the whole tragic story of this blood-soaked arena," said Cronus. "It is one thousand six hundred and seventy-one feet in diameter and was capable of holding eighty thousand spectators to witness the death struggles of wild beasts, to kill and devour each other, or beasts destroy men, or men each other.

"This horrid pastime was called the 'sports of the arena'—'the sports of the gods.'"

"This vast slaughter-pen, to thrill blood-thirsty rulers, and their noble followers, was erected by the emperors Vespasian and Titus, between 75 and 80 A. D. at an expense sufficient to have built a metropolis. It, like all other great outlays of human energy and sacrifice, was erected in honor of a human hero-god—Nero, one of the meanest rulers of men history records.

"The name *Nero* means—*ner* = lamp, *o* = disc of the sun.

"For four hundred years, this arena was saturated with innocent blood, much of which was human. You may still



look into the dens wherein wild beasts were starved till they would devour both man and beast in the arena, midst the shouts of crazed spectators.

"You will observe that only about one-third of the original structure remains, the balance having been confiscated mainly by the popes of Rome for building purposes. That is the usual respect shown by the catholic powers toward the works of ordinary men. Truly the modern devours the antiquated, as the modern god swallows all previous gods.

"Something is always found devouring the excrements of the ages, 'sacred history' is the living fruit and 'profane history' the excrement. We feed our school children upon profanity.

"The vulgar desire of men to glorify themselves has consumed nine-tenths of the whole human energy. The idiotic doctrine of national grandeur has caused all the great wars, and impoverished the people of the world. Patriotism is a form of hysteria.

"One-half the money allegedly spent for public improvements in the United States is pure graft, to maintain in a multitude of unnecessary offices the political hangers-on, with the country literally wallowing in poverty and hunger.

"Did you ever attempt to learn how vast sums of money spent in bribing the way of candidates into office, are returned to the alleged donors? If you do not know, then check up each official elected and learn the number of relatives, and political field workers, who are lapping the cream off the public treasuries.

"Europe, long ago, passed through this. England, for instance, could not tax the people for sunlight, but every ray of light entering the homes of the people was taxed by a tax put upon windows through which it passed.

"Do you suppose nature forgives such blasphemies? Well I, time, am the official measurer. Reaction equals action, and reaction is inevitable.

"The United States is but a century and a half old. Its mixture and confusion of races, languages, and political tyr-

anny, marks its future port as clearly as a mariner's chart points the nose of his vessel towards the port of his destination. You do not seem to realize that your nation is a composite nation. It is a conglomerate mass of conflicting elements, each attempting to enslave or devour all the others. There is no visible mercy or discretion. Every nation of Europe is whetting its teeth to devour its juicy slice, when the hour of allotment comes. The day is not far distant.

"The church teaches self-sacrifice, but you do not find it practicing what it preaches. Did it exhibit the spirit of self-sacrifice when it used its every power and strength to deprive all the people of the beverages which had been enjoyed through all ages, and which God demanded by law, and Jesus Christ himself made? No, the church saw to it, that its wine cellars, and the wine cellars of the Jews, working with it, were exempted.

"Little did the ignorant masses realize that the nation was being betrayed into a violation of its own constitution, by adding an amendment which brought the churches under the protection which had been practically denied it up to this time.

"Washington, Jefferson, Madison, and others of the early presidents, strenuously vetoed every effort to amend the provision of the constitution forbidding legislation recognizing religion.

"If an almighty God could not make his church, and his priesthood, self-sustaining, but wholly dependent upon human sacrifice, why the necessity for such a God, and his all consuming church?

"History, and statistics, prove, beyond all refutation, that the evils which the church pretends to correct, have systematically increased every hour since its introduction."

"You seem very bitter on this subject, Cronus," said the Doctor.

"Ah! If you could know all that I know of the hypocrisy, deceit, intrigue and false-pretense of the secret ecclesiastic power, you, too, would be bitter," replied Cronus. "But,

let us see more of Rome, the seat of this intrigue against humanity at large. You will not soon desire to return here. It smells like the tombs of Egypt, and its atmosphere is not sweetened by the odors arising from the vatican garbage-cans, and papal intrigues.

"The catholic church names Rome as the seat of all governments, and the vatican as the heart of civilization—what contemptible egotism.

"The catholic propaganda has its roots in Rome, and, like a poisonous vine, it creeps into the heart of every nation to cultivate evil, upon which it feeds. Jesuitry is the *nitrogenous bacteria* concealed beneath its surface, to fasten its tendrils upon all it seeks to secretly confiscate. You know that your spiral symbolizes absorption.

"It closely follows the law of nature which requires every system to cultivate and fertilize that upon which it depends for support. It is a self-evident fact, that, had the church not originally brought evil into the world, there could have been no foundation for a church. It is equally true, that, were there no evil in the world, there would be no necessity for the church. It is to be supposed that endless thousands of fat-jowled, pig-bellied priests would deliberately destroy the essential elements upon which they fatten?

"At your convenience turn to Romans 3:19, and you will know why evil thrives. All men should shall be legislated into crime, and your government is exercising its whole legislative forces to fulfill this damnable purpose. You are so smothered in criminal laws, it is impossible to enumerate them. Crime, and human necessity, are the most highly commercialized things in the United States."

"Again I must suggest that you are severe in your criticisms," said the Doctor.

"Again I reply, time knows all. You will also know the horrible truth in due time. I am doubly inspired to vent my knowledge here in Rome, the cradle of all the evils which have beset younger nations. Now we shall examine some of

the slats in this sin-rocked cradle," and pointing to an elevated part of the city, Cronus exclaimed:

"There is the beginning. You may draw your own deductions. On that Mount Palatine, in 753 B. C., was established a rendezvous of safety for all the renegade thieves, robbers, murderers and rogues of Europe. This 'city of refuge' became the model for Biblical 'cities of refuge,' and for subsequent walled monasteries for refuges where monks and priests might escape from the world which they were planning to loot. Here was raised the first banner of defiance, which has become the flag of the spirit of war in every nation.

"That was the beginning of Rome. Similar refuges have been established throughout the world by the catholic propaganda. So vicious and obtrusive did these monastic dens become, especially England and France broke them up, expelling the inmates from the countries, and confiscating their properties. It reflects no credit to the United States that monasticism and jesuitry are safely established, and well protected there, and, you should blush that the earliest colonies in the United States were founded by fugitive criminals from the prisons of Europe, especially England.

"Ah! Here we have before us the most hated structure in Europe, *Castle Saint Angelo*. The mother, in hellish tortures, of the 'Tower of London,' and the 'Bastille of Paris.'

"The most vulgar art of all the world once decorated its walls, so gross the world's great art galleries dare not reproduce them.

"Well may it be named the mother of cruel prisons. It housed the victims of savage beasts who desired to put their hated opponents where they could be gradually tortured to death.

"But come, let us see the key-stone of catholicism, St. Peter's.

"Here we stand in the great '*Plaza di s. Pietro*.' It was built under Popes Alexander VII and Clement IX, 1657-1667.

"Observe the two hundred and eighty-four great columns, eighty-six pilasters and ninety-six statues. Like the confisca-

tion of the copper from the church of the 'Mother of God,' the Pantheon, and the stone from the Colosseum, the obelisk in the centre of the circle was confiscated from the ancient 'city of the sun,' Heliopolis, and brought to Rome by Pope Sixtus V. He had placed upon its summit a catholic cross.

"Pause and ponder the vulgar vanity of these popes. They thus appropriate a monument erected to the Egyptian sun-god, and patch it up with a cross to stand as a monument to the fabulous christian God. Isn't that a Jewish trick?

"The christian church is but a fence for stolen doctrines.

"To illustrate the utter nonsense of this godly stuff, large portions have been demolished and replaced with features meeting with the whims and ideas of various popes, at tremendous expense. Of all the junk-piles in the world, St. Peter's represents the greatest vain conceit of men, and the greatest human sacrifice of energy misspent.

"We will now stroll upon the *Corso Vittorio* to the *Foro Romano*.

"Here we are. Originally this was covered with marshes, and periodically inundated by the rise of the river Tiber.

"In former times the *Forum* consisted of two squares, of which the smaller—near the church of *S. Adriano*, was the *Comizio*, and was used for voting purposes. The other was the real *Forum*, or place of business, promenade, and games. When the area was drained, the courts were built in the *Forum*, and the *Curia* (senate hall) in the *Comizio*, and the *rostrum* for the *orators*, where more foolishness was spouted than may be heard in an extra session of the United States Congress. They did about everything in the *Forum* but train fleas (these ran wild). Around this hole in the ground rose temples, and the dwellings of the pontiffs. Here also were held sports and games to shame humanity with their cruelty.

"It was so popular the christian God turned the pagan buildings into christian churches, to get into the push.

"Ha! Then came along one Roberto Guiscardo, and Brancalcione, and destroyed the whole show, leaving only a few

of the broken land-marks to show the power of God left on earth.

"Is it not strange that deluded humanity does not recognize these palpable evidences of the absurdity of the christian God character?

"You may always find a conspicuous pope attaching himself to the tail of the advertising kite. In 1536, Pope Paul III, who had defied Europe by adding the *fourth vow to jesuitry, making him the master of that sinister order and making it a militant branch of the catholic church*, conceived the idea of using the defunct *Forum* to demonstrate the growing papal power. He opened up a triumphal way through the *Forum* for the solemn entrance of Charles V, the emperor of Germany, into Rome. Charles laughed so loud it shook all Rome.

"In 1513 Pope Leo X had begun the excavation in the *Forum*, but the sacking of Rome by the troops of Constable de Bourbon, in May, 1527, stopped this work.

"Clement VII was elected pope in 1523, and he was practically compelled to crown Charles V emperor of Germany.

"Charles was a bad boy, and began to shove Clem. about in a manner to offend the papal dignity, therefore the pope drew his tried and trusty blade, political intrigue, and began to place obstacles in the way of Charles' success. He formed a league against him, calling it the 'holy league,' because he, the 'pope,' the 'vicar of Jesus Christ,' and the 'image of God' on earth, was at the head of it. The king of France, the king of England, the Venetians, and the vatican, constituted this ungodly combination.

"Well, when Charlie learned of this audacious proposition he cussed a blue streak, and to make his resentment more insulting, he sent an army composed of Lutherans to Rome. They sacked the city, lathered old Clem's back well, and chucked him into a filthy prison sell in Saint Angels, to sweat out his pompous conceit.

"The christian God was with Charles, and he nearly laughed his ribs out.

"For a long time the old cluttered ditch, the *Forum*, was

a popular rock upon which to hang papal advertising exploitations, as well as the family wash.

"I have but one more curiosity to show to you today. We shall now visit the church of the *Friars Minor* in *Are Coeli*. Here we are.

"One of the greatest attitudes of hypocrisy assumed by the christian exploitation, is its brazen denial that it practices idol-worship. If it had not adopted art, and decorated the walls of St. Peter's, and its cathedrals and churches, with pictures, which are nothing but idols to fascinate and thrill the ignorant people, and fill them with awe and hysteria, the church would have died fifteen centuries ago. If it had not frightened the superstitious into a blaa-blaa worship of an imaginary bloody man hanging upon a cross, the fabulous Jesus Christ would never had been received as other than a fable.

"If the soul-wrecking picture of a suffering 'virgin Mary,' with a plump babe upon her ample lap, had not been maintained in the christian idol worship, the gaping, ignorant victims of ecclesiastical duplicity would have been left a receptive mind to learn the truth, that *Mary* is but a figure in code signifying *rebellion*, and the people could have understood why the doctrine, of which she is a central figure, was not fully canonized until the middle of the nineteenth century. It required eighteen hundred years for the church itself to accept, as authentic, its own fabulous Jesus Christ.

"But, the capsheaf of all idol worship of all ages, the evidence of catholic duplicity, and papal avarice, is before you: Behold! and if you were visible and material, you would have to drop upon your knees, in an attitude of prayer, or be rudely invited to get out.

"This wooden urchin, with the piggy, priestly face, is named '*S. Bambino Di Arocoeli Roma*.' It is supposed to represent the infant Jesus.

"See! It stands upon satin pillows, richly embroidered with gold; its body from neck to heels, is swathed in the rarest of jeweled creations, estimated at a valuation of about one million dollars. Upon its head rests a crown of rare gems.

This crown was placed upon the wooden-head on May 2, 1897 by the vatican chapter. Leo XIII, January 18, 1894, had blessed this wooden idol, dedicating to it a prayer especially worded, and constructed, to throw catholic visitors into a spell of hysteria, causing them to strip the jewels from their own persons, and hand them to the priest in charge of the idol, who drapes them upon the dummy figure, as you now see them. This wooden image is, perhaps, the most prolific source of income to the catholic church to be found in Rome, or as an individual thing, perhaps in the world.

"The reward for fanatical generosity will make you laugh—but thank your stars you cannot laugh aloud.

"'One hundred days indulgence once a day applicable to the souls in purgatory' (Leo XIII, January 18, 1894).

"See that beautiful diamond-encrusted watch, with the long jeweled chain. Well, this prayer was the spiritual stuff handed to its donor by that fat-bellied priest.

"More catholics visit this idol in the year than visit St. Peter's; and each individual must pay the limit of the temper of old pot-belly in charge.

"Ha, ha! I have an inspiration. Whoever named that big baby baseball player, in the United States, '*Bambino*,' must have been an idol-worshipping catholic," said Grub.

"That's the exact idea, a profitable idol who attracts the dough," replied Cronus. Your great weakness in the United States is the coining of counterfeit heroes.

"Your athletic 'sports' are but pathetic and childish imitations of the heroics of history. They train the physical body at the expense of the mind, but the secret intrigue back of it is hellish war.

"If there was no other thing in the world to condemn the church—and there are thousands—this one full-fledged idol should convict it of wilfully obtaining money under false pretense. Thousands of men, women and children are rotting in your prisons, convicted of trivial crimes when compared with this. The whine that these are free gifts is the real crime. Well do they know that the secret mental coercion,



accompanying each gift, is irresistible, and carries greater pain than the verdict of a savage, soul-hardened judge.

"And now you will have something to think about. I will bid you good-bye, till we three meet again."

"The Doctor looked sharply at Grub, who seemed to be much puzzled upon awakening.

"What's teasing you, boy?" asked the Doctor.

"Well, I'm puzzled to know why all of our excursions seem to develop into raids upon the christian church, and criticism of the attitude of governments toward the masses of people, which seems to reflect a favoritism towards the church," seriously replied Grub.

"Are you skeptical of the truths being revealed?" asked the Doctor.

"On the contrary. It fully corroborates my own belief that humanity has long been a victim of premeditated exploitation, by invisible powers," replied Grub. "But what part is Cronus playing, that he makes this his specialty?"

"Without going deeply into the subject now, Grub, I am convinced that Cronus is but the medium through which natural, invisible forces are striving to expose great errors in human development, with the view of their correction."

"I see," murmured Grub.

## CHAPTER XVI

"Well, Grub, you have turned scientific research into a thrilling sport," laughingly said the Doctor, as they seated themselves for their morning conference.

"Why the excessive compliment?" asked Grub, pausing to observe the Doctor's apparent enthusiasm. The Doctor was carrying under his arm Martin's "Human Body." Continuing, Grub said:

"It must be a gruesome thing that requires you to carry about with you a 'human body.'"


So intent was the Doctor on the morning's subject, he did not immediately grasp the joke, and Grub pointed to the book. The Doctor laughed heartily and placed the book, with some papers, upon the table.

"It's about your primary waves, Grub. I am really amazed to find them a guide which, in due time, will obviate a large part of the uncertain labor of study and research. I am so elated I can hardly wait to go into a deeper examination," and the Doctor actually rubbed his hands in a sort of ecstasy, as he plunged directly into his subject.


"In the organic structures, absorption, digestion, assimilation and elimination form a consecutive highway from which branch innumerable paths. Let us adjust this to your waves," and he spread upon the table a large sheet of paper, well diagramed with illustrations.

"First, we will examine the process of nourishing the body:

○ We place our food in a round orifice, our *mouth*, located in the globular head.

 We masticate our food with our *teeth*.

 We swallow our food through the *pharynx*.

 The masticated food passes through the *oesophagus*.

☉ And passes into the *stomach*.

"The process of digesting the food in the stomach is specifically by a spiral motion.

"Now, my boy, how does that impress you? Of course we have previously gone over this ground, but it is well to get a permanent picture of this process fixed in our minds, for it applies alike to the nourishment of all living animals," and the Doctor leaned back in his chair as though well pleased with his work.

"That is the first half of the process, eh?" said Grub, as he carefully examined the diagram.

"Yes, and you will observe this is a physical process, under mental guidance, wholly within the body, requiring no active service on the part of the external sense organs after our food has entered the mouth—a subjective process," explained the Doctor.

"Ah! How clearly that distinguishes between the objective and subjective," said Grub.

"Yes, and where do these seemingly independent personalities hold conference? In the brain, the seat of consciousness. Hence, thought is the final cyclic fruit. The first half of the process terminates in the spiral process of digestion, and the second half terminates in the globular head or brain. But there is a dual aspect to this process, with digestion as a spiral hub. The administration of nourishing food is mechanical, up to the time of the entrance of the macerated mass into the stomach; here the process separates into the elimination of waste products, and the assimilation of the living products of digestion, the one physical and the other psychical; the one passing back to the earth to be re-digested and become the energized elements for the earthy vegetation, and the other to be duly distributed to construct our living tissues. In this latter process are many intricate, subconscious operations following the same cyclic laws, before the final fruit of mentation is ripened in the brain—the power of formative thought, and reflection. This at once reveals the brain as the moon of this physical system. Where,

then, is the sun, which necessarily must precede the moon? Very emphatically comes the response, the heart!

"Now, my boy, we have clearly defined two seats, or centres, of mentation, and two seats of thought, the one representing the objective, and the other the subjective mind. We may now understand why the subjective mind struggles and longs for freedom, and is filled with desire, hope and aspiration.

"The heart is the seat of the subjective mind and thought—in darkness, ignorance.

"For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies;

"These are the things which defile a man' (Matt. 15:19, 20).

"The brain is the seat of the objective mind and reason—light, understanding.

"This distinctly separates man into two individualities—the physical, or earthy man, with the seat of mentation in the heart, and the nervous man with the seat of mentation in the brain.

"Do you now understand why the priesthood is placed above the common earthy herd?

"The brain is the seat of the God man.

"The heart is the seat of the Christ man.

"The stomach is the seat of the producing man.

"Do you now see why the church is so strongly opposed to cultivating reason in the masses?

"Do you now understand the significance of this passage in the Bible?

"And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to *know what was in thine heart*, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments or no.



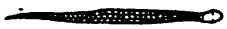
"And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger' (Deut. 8:2, 3).

"There is not one visible element in nature to justify the organization of mankind into these arbitrary classes. Chris-

tianity is a clean-cut usurpation of human rights uniformly belonging to all men alike."

"In this nourishing process I see an excellent lesson in selectivity," said Grub.

"Yes, selectivity is a most essential element in nourishing both body and mind. It selects the materials for assimilation after emulsification in the stomach. This gives to the stomach a dual function. The spiral motion ceases after emulsification, and the rejection of the waste becomes an original series of movements, carrying this eliminant back into the creative cycle. Hence the excrements become fertilizers for the earthy products. This is proven by the waves which execute the act," and the Doctor again spread out the diagram and followed the waves of elimination.

○ Stomach which automatically pushes the emulsified pabulum into the small intestines  from which the waste portions pass into the colon  and are pushed into the rectum .

"We know the tendency for the solid excreted matter to coil into a spiral form.

"This has reference to the solid excrement."

"What about the fluid?" asked Grub.

"Why, you must polish up on your physiology," replied the Doctor. "You know the function of the kidneys is to eliminate the excess fluids of the body, and there is a way by which to determine that their structure is for this important purpose. The malpighian layer of the epidermis is identical with the *malpighian pyramids* of the kidneys, and both discharge a fluid excrement from the body. They also reveal your system of waves in their structure.



"The position of these waves indicate enforced elimination, a good demonstration that the external forces are afferent, and the inner forces are efferent."

"Yes, gee!" exclaimed Grub. "That surely does corroborate our original cyclic wave system. One could locate heaven by following the lightning, thunder and rain."

"Now add hail, and you have your vibratory, gaseous, solid and fluid. Also the waves of seeing, hearing, tasting and smelling, and when the lightning strikes you, you have feeling and you know you are in heaven," laughingly said the Doctor.

"But there is no reaction in such a process," grumbled Grub.

"Why, it is a reactive thing in itself," retorted the Doctor. "Heaven resents the attempt of earthy things trying to make a ladder of the zig-zag lightning, to break the barrier and climb into the universal world. You showed me in the ecclesiastical code that lightning means God's judgments and vengeance, and thunder expresses God's displeasure, and rain means doctrines."

"Yes, and we do not have the one without the other," said Grub.

"Let us examine this a little farther," said the Doctor. "The process clearly demonstrates that light is more rapidly transmitted than sound. Although both are simultaneously produced, we see the lightning before we hear the thunder."

"I believe this puts one over on the ecclesiasts, for it puts God's vengeance and punishment before he shows his displeasure," said Grub.

"We may examine this perhaps with profit," said the Doctor.

"'God thunders his power' (Job 25:14).

"'Thunder is the voice of God' (Job 40:9).

"'The voice of the Lord divideth the flames of fire' (Ps. 29:7). (Lightning.)

"'The secret places of thunder' (Ps. 81:7).

"Jesus named some of his apostles 'sons of thunder' (Mark 3:17).

"'Out of the throne proceeded lightnings and thunderings' (Rev. 4:5).

"'The temple of God was opened in heaven and there

were lightnings and thunderings, and great hail' (Rev. 11:19).

"This constant placing of lightning before thunder reveals that this tommy-rot is all based upon a knowledge of these elemental things. We may prove, without argument, that the christian God, in these fanciful things, is a fiction, by their own code.

*"He-aven* signifies vacuum, or nothingness.

"Vacuum is an essential factor in the development of the primary electrons, hence, heaven merely signifies the vacuity of universal space, in which these electrons reside. It is not material, therefore, neither a personal God nor his temple could reside there. Any temple in which God is to be worshiped by men, must be a material structure on this earth, and they themselves confess this. Moreover, they confess that man is the God on this earth." And the Doctor quoted from the Bible:

"'God manifests in the flesh' (1 Tim. 3:16).

"Jesus himself said to the Jews:

"'Is it not written in your law I said ye are Gods?' (Jno. 10:24).

"'Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?' (1 Cor. 3:16).

"Now, do you grasp all this, Grub?"

"Indeed I do," replied Grub. "God is simply embodied wisdom, for John 4:24 says, 'God is spirit', and this is the Christ principle within us. Christ is the wisdom of God (1 Cor. 1:24).

"Does this not intimate the possibility of contact with the universal mentation as the spirit God?

"Therefore, every man is a god to the extent of his stored wisdom.

"This is clean-cut gnosticism, Doctor.

"It is more: 'The word was God' (John 1:1). 'Christ is the wisdom of God' (1 Cor. 1:24) and the 'word of God' (Rev. 19:13).

"Christ declares:

"'I am the light of the world' (Jno. 8:12).

"Now, we have it right. *Light* in the code stands for knowledge, understanding.

"*God*, then, is potential, unrevealed wisdom. Knowledge is symbolized by light.

"'No man hath seen God at any time. God dwelleth in us' (1 John 4:12).

"*Christ* is the 'wisdom of God,' revealed by word into intelligent knowledge and understanding. This makes thought God, and speech Christ, the spoken word. Hence, no man hath seen God.

"*Man* is the living temple, within which God conceals himself, as intellect.

"Now, Doctor, we have for good and all, identified the abiding place of God as the primary electron in *he-aven*, the universal pabulum. His earthy abiding place is in the brain of the animal body.

"The Christ character is the human expression of God, in his image and likeness. He is the spirit within the living body, and in this embodied state he is the Christ or active principle.

"It is by this process that the christian scheme personifies God in the priesthood. There is not one single justification for this purely usurpative attitude towards mankind at large, on the part of a self-constituted priesthood. They openly confess to having usurped the rights of all governments to educate and develop their own peoples.

"Jacob was the beginning of the christian church, and in their own secret code *Jacob* means usurpation."

"Well! Well! Well!" exclaimed the Doctor. "That certainly clarifies the whole christian scheme. The ecclesiasts deliberately destroyed gnosticism; appropriated its wisdom; usurped the power to teach, and degraded humanity in ignorance. By training the ignorant masses as its own militant body-guard, it seized the temporal power over all the European rulers, which symbolizes the temporal supremacy over the darkness of ignorance.

"Europe means darkness. And, it has, subsequently, pre-



tended to peddle its stolen wisdom in exchange for 'bread, mutton and good wine on the lees'—'carnal things.' Better look carefully into that bargain made with old Jakie (Gen. 28) and try to locate the 'nigger in the woodpile' who is getting that rake-off of 'ten percent.'

"Wow! but that surely is a hot one."

"Wait a minute; listen to this," said Grub. "Christ's disciples said to him:

"'Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and that thou comest forth from God' (Jno. 16:30).

"*Gnosis* means to know, knowledge.

"'Christ is the wisdom of God' (1 Cor. 1:24).

"Now, wisdom must be interpreted before it becomes understandable knowledge, therefore the teacher, who speaks the word:

"'We know that thou art a teacher come from God' (Jno. 3:2).

"Christ, then, symbolizes the revelation of wisdom, and wisdom revealed is practical knowledge. We may readily understand by this, that control of education may dole out to humanity only that which it is intended it should know. The loud pretense of education is merely to proclaim the church, and the priesthood, as the only source from which knowledge may be obtained. Listen to this:

"'Get wisdom, get understanding' (Prov. 4:5).

"'Wisdom is the principal thing, therefore get wisdom; and with all thy getting get understanding' (Prov. 4:7).

"'Buy the truth, and sell it not; also wisdom, instruction and understanding' (Prov. 23:23).

"Can you beat it? This is where they put their stuff on the market," exclaimed the Doctor. "We may readily understand why the catholics are so strong for their own schools, and why the churches are so determined to control our public schools; education is their self-protection as well as a stock in trade."

"One thing is clear to me," said Grub. "Either our government is in collusion with this sinister church power, or its

executive machinery is too ignorant or indifferent to be worthy of public confidence, for the church is too conspicuous in civil affairs. This intrusion should be resented instead of being coddled."

"We have wandered away from our original theme, Grub," said the Doctor. "What I desired to expound was, that the human being is the embodiment of the whole creative scheme, revealing by his physical structures, and organic functions, the final intent and purpose of creative nature. Nevertheless, it is puny and contemptible to intimate that mankind is the end and essence of the vast scheme of nature, and he a mere animal creature upon this earth or planet, which is but a cell of the greater structure. But he is the highest evolved being upon this planet, and is normally endowed with extraordinary mental faculties.

"It is a visible and understandable truth, that, nature intended to endow all her living creatures with the same opportunities for self-promotion, consistent with their physical powers for acquiring knowledge, else it would not have given to them the same external organs for acquiring such knowledge.

"And so evolution, as a living fact, has placed the living classes in equal environment, and brought the observing individual into contacts and experiences to promote a higher state of being. It is clear that, deprivation of these natural opportunities would prevent such promotion, in fact, would strongly tend toward demotion.

"We have revealed the facts which justify the accusation that an organized human force did conspire to cheat humanity at large out of its true natural inheritance, a gnostic enlightenment.

"But, I have confidence in the strange power which is guiding us to, at least, fully reveal to mankind the raw truth. It is for the people to consider if they should take action to correct the horrid evil.

"Humanity was ruthlessly crucified in the name of a

fabulous Jesus Christ, in the confiscation of its normal wisdom, power and authority.

"Now let's rest, Grub."

"Just a moment, Doctor. Your lecture has opened a place to record a memorandum which I had outlined to adjust our waves to action and reaction. Here it is:

## ACTION



|           |           |            |        |          |
|-----------|-----------|------------|--------|----------|
| Electron  | Nitrogen  | Oxygen     | Carbon | Hydrogen |
| Ice       | Cold      | Warm       | Dry    | Moist    |
| Potential | Vibratory | Gaseous    | Solid  | Fluid    |
| Impulse   | Energy    | Atmosphere | Earth  | Sea      |
| Heaven    | God       | Christ     | Man    | Woman    |

## REACTION



|         |        |        |            |            |
|---------|--------|--------|------------|------------|
| Root    | Trunk  | Limbs  | Leaves     | Fruit      |
| Marrow  | Bone   | Muscle | Flesh      | Man        |
| Eve     | Adam   | Seth   | Enos       | Temptation |
| Thought | Speech | Word   | Action     | Fall       |
| Church  | Gospel | Christ | Conversion | Redemption |

"The sun also is symbolized by the spiral ☉, this being its original attitude, when first born.

"The moon is symbolized by the circle ○.

"We may readily recognize the spiritual combination of the spiral and the circle, in axial and orbital motions of the earth, and the mechanical nature of our atmosphere.

"This reveals the sun as God, the father; the moon as the mother church, and the earth as the son—Adam is a figure of Christ.

"If the sun is the *father*, and the earth is the *son*, na-

turally, the ghostly moon is the *holy-ghost* in the physical, planetary system.

"This is the visible planetary trinity personified.

"There are no other available elements, with appreciable contacts, which may assume these christian characters. There is no possible evasion of the truth; the christian religion, in its last analysis, is personified planetary worship, and nature-worship.

" 'For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire' (Deut. 4:24; Heb. 12:29).

" 'For the Lord thy God is a sun' (Ps. 84:11).

"The assumption was, that the first body formed out of the electric field was the sun, out of which whirling mass was cast the earth. This would make the emanation from the first spiral body hot instead of cold, and it is out of the sun the first god of fire appears, and fire-worship follows sun-worship.

"Abram, 'the father of all,' comes out of *ur*, fire, and he is the first high-priest of sun and fire-worship

"Abraham is heat.

"*Ab* = father, *ra* = the sun, *ham* = hot.

"The high hot father—the sun."

## CHAPTER XVII

"Ah! Doctor. You do not seem so chipper this morning. Why?" gently remarked Grub, as the Doctor slowly entered the library with bowed head, as though in deep meditation. Shaking himself out of his semi-trance the Doctor replied:

"No, Grub, I am not in a playful mood. I surely have had a night of it, but I am amply rewarded. I have demonstrated to my own satisfaction that we truly have revealed a new science, or rather resurrected an old one.

"Gnosticism lives. It is the recorded mentation of all living matter, from the humblest cell to the most exalted being. It resides in four states: potential or dormant; active and creative; static or contemplative, and cumulative and manifested. In this combination, this is the thinking, reasoning spirit of primitive nature embodied in the flesh, with mankind as the culminating creature."

"Gee! but that is a tremendous proposition," exclaimed Grub.

"Indeed it is, and when fully demonstrated, it will leave enough vacant seats, chairs and thrones of flimsy, self-exalted great-I-ams, to supply the world with kindling-wood for a long time. But, now let's get down to business," said the Doctor.

"You may accuse me of repetitions, Grub, but the subject is too important to trim to literary practices. Here is something to interest you," and the Doctor placed upon the table some illustrations taken from books on physiology, together with some rough drawings of his own.

"You are right, Grub, one is seized with an irresistible impulse to put on paper a record of his thoughts upon this all-absorbing subject.

"Some place in the Bible, we are told that the early morning hours are best for thought, and that, I find, is true. Although awake and fully conscious, concentrated thought, at that time, assumes a condition of semi-trance. After these

morning thoughts one feels a strong desire to record them.

"We are now in a strong position to demonstrate that a clique of self-promoters, calling themselves ecclesiasts, deliberately confiscated the original gnostic system and, to this end, destroyed organized gnosticism; and the meanest part of this hellish scheme was to submerge humanity at large in ignorance and crime. The evidence of this stands boldly out in authentic history. Moreover, it is corroborated in the Bible.

"The scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe' (Gal. 3:22).

"Thus do they commercialize crime to bribe a church following.

"Previous to this, back in Rom. 3:19, it is specifically declared that all must be made guilty under the law, which is the school-master, to drive them into the church after which they are no longer under the law (Gal. 3:25).

"Do you now recognize the significance of the confessional?

"Freedom of speech shall be suppressed by law' (Rom. 3:19).

"This is the most outrageous trickery and dishonesty ever attempted by men.

"This all-saving 'faith in Jesus Christ,' when carefully analyzed, simply means faith in the church to accumulate vast wealth, and power and authority of high office.

"*Jesus is Joshua*, meaning increased wealth.

"Christ means usurpation of high office.

"But, of all the impudent presumptions to be found in this fabulous, religio-political scheme, the concealment of the gnostic wisdom in symbolisms, and personifications, as revealed by interpretations by the secret ecclesiastical code, and the compiling of this into the christian Bible as the basic literature of the christian religion, is the capsheaf of a colossal conspiracy against humanity at large.

"There is not one visible evidence of justification for the making of all men imbecils to draw them into this out-

rageous scheme. There, in my enthusiasm I have deviated from my main theme. I have reassembled much of our previous work in this lesson, a sort of review, putting it together in a most convincing manner.

“These illustrations separate the triune man into his essential parts revealing him as the earthy God-man:

### THE GNOSTIC STORY OF MAN

#### THE PERFECTED MAN OF FLESH

“‘God created man in his own image, male and female created he them’ (Gen. 1:27).



“‘God manifests in the flesh’ (1 Tim. 3:16).

## THE NITROGEN BODY—THE NERVES

*"Shem—the man of flesh. (The physical body of the holy ghost revealed.)*



“‘Know ye not that your body is the temple of the holy ghost which is in you?’ (1 Cor. 6:19).

“If the nervous system could be wholly dissected out of the tissues and made stiff enough to stand alone, it would in a ghost-like manner reveal the entire contour of the body and its organs.

“The tree of life manifested in the flesh.

“Note the conserving nature of this nervous net-work, so closely interwoven that it is impossible to dissect it out from the tissues it surrounds and penetrates.

“It gives impulse to every thought and act of the human organism. It does not differentiate between good and evil.

“Shem symbolizes the flesh and skin which cover and protect the nerves and muscles.

“Noah is the brain.

“*No* means place; *ah* is an abbreviated form of *Jah*, Jehovah, God, hence Noah signifies the place of God, which identifies God as the thinking power of man, located in the brain.



## THE OXYGEN BODY—THE MUSCLES

*"Japheth—enlarged, persuader. The son (the Christ body).*



## SUPERFICIAL MUSCLES OF THE BODY

Each is fastened to bones that lie underneath

"Christ manifests in the muscles.

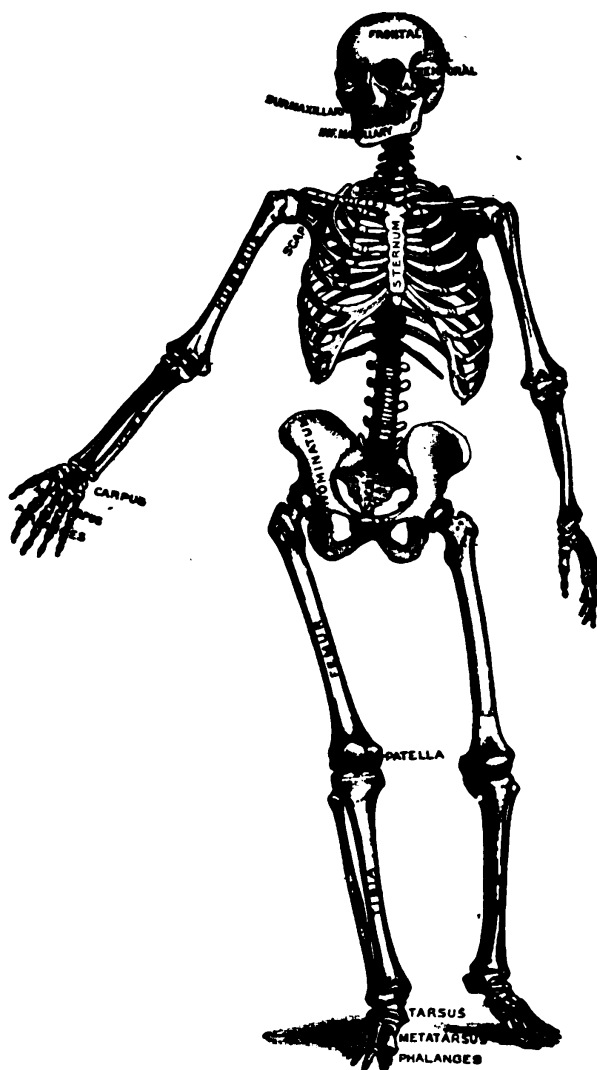
"This muscular man at once reveals expansive powers. Note the tendency for the ligaments which extend out from the ends of the muscles to radiate in fan-like forms, revealing the expansive, radiating nature of oxygen. The entire surface of this man is covered by the network of nerves which distribute and regulate the expenditure of physical impulse and energy. This is the executor of the body.

## THE CARBON BODY—THE MAN

HAM—black, burned.

“‘Cursed be Canaan (Ham) ; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren’ (Gen. 9:25).

“The bones bear all of the burdens of the body, and are the charred evidences of chemical combustion in the human system.



THE SKELETON

“Man manifests in the bones.

“The muscles govern and dictate to the skeleton its every action, nevertheless, the skeleton is absolutely essential to

carry out the commercial functions between the body and the external world, hence, Ham becomes Canaan, commerce and trading, the natural exchanges and compensations of life.

“‘And the body is not one member but many.

“‘But now are they many members yet one body.

“‘And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee; nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you’ (1 Cor. 12).

“This is an important truth. The feet alone can give the body axial motion. They may take us to a thing but we must grasp it with our hands. The eye can guide us but it requires physical action to move the body, and muscular action would be useless without the bony structure.

## THE HYDROGEN BODY—THE LYMPHATICS

### THE WOMAN, THE MOTHER OF ALL LIVING

“Organic life is manifested in the waters. All impulse for physical action must pass through the four creative waves, terminating in the lymphatics, the hydrogen coil.



### LYMPHATICS OF THE HAND

Smaller tubes lie near the surface, larger ones lie deeper

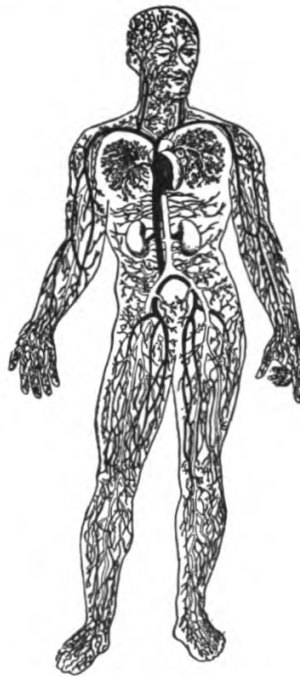
“Woman manifests in the lymph and medullated matter. Her dual nature in the planetary scheme is in the waters associated with the land, and the moon as the satellite to the planet. *Eve* means life, the waters. *Evi* means desire, the attraction between the moon and the earth.

“The lymphatics center in the hands because of the necessity for a myriad of discriminations in performing its functions.

### THE TREE OF GOOD AND EVIL

“ ‘In the day ye eat of the tree of good and evil ye will be as Gods.’

“The arterial and venous circulation :



### VEINS AND ARTERIES

**Black tubes represent veins through which impure blood goes to the right side of the heart from all parts of the body; light-colored tubes represent arteries through which pure blood from the left side of the heart goes to all parts of the body. Notice that the large tubes of each kind lie near one another.**

“This proves that good and evil are inseparable.

“Now we are at the real facts regarding man. He has a spirit which dictates to the physical body, which expresses the will of the composite being.

“The seat of the spirit is in the brain and the seat of manifestation is in the members of the body.

“‘God is the head of Christ; Christ is the head of man, and man is the head of woman’ (1 Cor. 11:3). Flesh, muscle, bone and marrow.

“Woman, we have seen, represents the hydrogen coil, hence the lymphatics also represent the woman or female principle, and give expression to the mental impulses of the organic being.

“This is the great mystery, Grub.

“When Jesus was asked to explain why he did not reveal the truth to the multitudes, he said to his disciples:

“‘Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven but to them it is not given.

“‘Because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand’ (Matt. 13:11, 13).

“This is no explanation, but is merely a sop tossed to his followers. But, in Luke 8:10, 11, it is specifically stated that these so-called mysteries are withheld from the masses that they might not become wise and be saved.

“Now the kingdom of heaven is the ecclesiastical government. It was not intended that the ignorant masses should know the truth which would cause them to rise *en masse* against the church pretensions.

“This alleged mystery is carried so far that even the sermon of the priest is delivered in Latin, to prevent the congregation from understanding. And still the fool people are not insulted, because the ignorant ones do not even understand what it is all about—their religion is but awe and superstition.

“‘For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God; for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mystery’ (1 Cor. 14:2).

“What is this great mystery?

“It is man!

“The Lord knoweth the thoughts of man’ (Ps. 94:11).

“‘I know their thoughts’ (Isa. 66:18).

“Adam was cast out of the Garden of Eden because he

partook of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, and to prevent his partaking of the tree of life.

"Do you not grasp the truth, Grub

"It was the gnostic belief that man would develop a universal thought, and would form a conscious contact with the universal mind. This is what the ecclesiasts feared most. It was through cultivated thought such a development could arise. A garden is a place of cultivation.

"From Adam descended the posterity which first developed into the chosen people of God, beginning with Abraham, the 'father of us all' (Rom. 4:16).

"*Ab* = father—high-priest.

"*Ra* = the sun.

"*Ham* = hot—the heat of fire, zeal.

"*Ab-ra-ham* = the priest of the hot sun and fire. Hence Abraham came out of *ur*—fire.

"Let us see how they apply this to the human body.

"*Abraham* is the *head*, the chief-priest of the multitudes

"*Isaac* means joy, prosperity, laughter, *the face*. The *mouth* and *throat* are Jacob, meaning the supplanter, the usurper, and by the mouth he usurps the possessions of Esau, the external man, the producer. We see him confiscate with his hands the food to which Esau leads us by his exercises, and transfer them to the mouth. All the external sense organs lend themselves to his purpose, and these are Israel, the church.

"To the thoracic part of the body are attached the usurpative hands of Jacob. Benjamin, Jacob's youngest son, means the right-hand-protection and go-getter of the spoils.

"To the lower portion of the body are attached the legs and feet, attaching Esau to the earth.

"*Esau* means earthy, producing mankind.

"The legs and feet lead to the prey, and the arms and hands seize it.

"Esau, the elder twin, is entitled to first position, but God enters into a conspiracy with Jacob to defraud Esau, the earthy man, out of his birth-right. This was a clean cut

fraud, in which Jacob takes mean advantage of the blind father, and deliberately lies to him.

“‘Art thou my very son Esau, and Jacob said, I am’ (Gen. 27:24).

“In the very next chapter God makes a bargain with Jacob.

“‘And Jacob vowed a vow, saying, if God will be with me, and will keep me in this way that I go, and will give me bread to eat, and raiment to put on, then shall the Lord be my God, and of all that thou shalt give me I will surely give the tenth unto thee’ (Gen. 28).

“Jacob names the place where this bargain was made, *Bethel*, meaning the house of God, signifying the human body as distinguished from Israel, the head and face.

“God named Jacob *Israel*, meaning the church of Christ, and signifying having obtained a princely power from God.

“By this we may identify the christian God as the sun, by its revealed offspring—light—as symbolizing intelligence.

“*Is* = the light of *ra* = the sun, is *el* = the first cause.

“The light of the sun is the first cause.

“Christ declares:

“‘I am the light of the world’ (John 8:12).

“‘For the Lord God is a sun’ (Ps. 84:11).

“Now watch what follows:

“Jacob, usurpation, is the high-priest of Israel.

“Israel is the church of Christ.

“The ‘twelve sons of Israel’ is the church organization, as the twelve apostles of Christ represent the christian dispensation.

“See how clever:

“*Reuben*—vision, seeing light—the eye.

“*Simeon*—hearing, obedience, sound—the ear.

“*Levi*—restraint, smell—the nose.

“*Judah*—tasting, approval, praise—mouth.

“*Issachar*—compensation, respiration—the breath.

“*Zebulun*—dwelling, thorax—breasts.

“*Dan*—judgment, discretion—tongue.

*"Joseph—increase—organ.*

*"Naphtali—endeavor, struggle—fingers.*

*"Gad—armed and prepared troops—the teeth.*

*"Benjamin—protection, spoils—right hand.*

*"Asher—satisfaction, support—legs and feet.*

"These are the church forces, or organization, upon which it depends for support, promotion, extension, and protection.

"Do you fully grasp it, Grub?

"It is the external, physical man, as distinguished from the internal, mental or spiritual man.

"'Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?' (1 Cor. 3:16).

"This church of Christ feeds, protects and promotes the secret inner ecclesia, proving, beyond all doubt, that were the priesthood not kept supplied with 'bread, mutton and good wine on the lees,' there would be no church, which makes it plain that the church is merely a shield and refuge of men posing as special dispensations on earth.




"There are twelve external openings in the human body, both in the male and the female, each having its symbolic significance."

Grub sat in silence for a few moments, then said: "Doctor, I am so shocked to know that this strutting christian thing is such an apparent false-pretense, I must have time to think about it. I want to ask you to again take up the subject of the 'father, the son, and the holy ghost'."

"Well, that also is a physical proposition," said the Doctor. "A reactive manifestation.

"The father is the man of bone; the son is the man of muscle, and the holy ghost is the nervous system. The astonishing thing is, each of these is a system in itself, with special functions.

"The skeleton:

-  The skull.
-  The spinal column.
-  The ribs.



— The long bones of arms and legs.

⊙ The fingers and toes.

"This is the earthy man, Adam. Upon this earthy man is crucified the muscular man, the Christ.

"With the body standing erect, with the arms extended, a perfect cross is exhibited. This is the tree on which Christ was hanged.

"Christ was hanged at *Calvary*. This is the Latin for the Greek *kranion*, which signifies the *skull*. The Hebrew names it *golgotha*, meaning the skull.

"From the base of the skull the whole muscular system hangs upon the skeleton, the living cross.

"This is the figurative crucifixion of Christ.

"The mental lesion, following enforced ignorance, occurs at the base of the brain in the skull.

"The true or literal crucifixion, is the debasement of the greater humanity in ignorance, legislative crime, and cultivated poverty, to promote the mental supremacy of the few over the whole.

"Now, observe the manner by which the 'father,' the 'son' and the 'holy ghost' blend together.

"The skeleton is clothed and burdened by the muscular system.

"The muscular system is covered by a fine network of nerves. If these nerves could be dissected out of the body in a manner to permit it to stand alone it would appear as a ghostly tree. All of these merge into the God-man of flesh, especially the fat-bellied priest.

"'God created man in his own image, male and female created he them' (Gen. 1:27).

"'God was manifested in the flesh' (1 Tim. 3:16).

"'No man hath seen God at any time' (Jno. 1:18).

"This assembled body is the temple of the abstract, invisible God (1 Cor. 3:16).

"This intimates the flesh signifies the invisible medullary matter of the cerebro-spinal nerves.

“‘God dwelleth in us’ (1 John 4:12).

“‘God is a spirit, and they who worship him must worship him in the spirit’ (Jno. 4:24).

“‘He is not the God of the dead but of the living’ (Mark 12:27).

“Do you grasp all this, Grub?”

“It is truly a revelation, and very plain,” said Grub. “I would say the living process of the body is the godly spirit, but there must be some spiritual centre in the body as the seat of this God, even though God permeates all.”

“Right you are,” replied the Doctor.

“‘The life of the flesh is the blood thereof’ (Gen. 9:4).

“It is the blood which distributes the living elements throughout the tissues of the body, and right along with the blood we find the holy-ghost, the nerves. Hence Christ says:

“‘I and my father are one,’ meaning one dual system.

“The seat of the God principle is in the brain.

“The seat of the Christ principle is in the heart.

“Christ is always pictured as a bloody character.

“‘He was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood’ (Rev. 19:13).

“God forbids eating raw flesh with the blood therein, because the blood is the life thereof.

“Gee!” exclaimed Grub. “Why, the eucharist teaches cannibalism by declaring it is the real blood and flesh of Christ’s body.”

“Right you are again, my boy,” said the Doctor. “That is exactly the purpose of the eucharist, to bring a remnant of the cannibal religion into the universal church, which embraces all religions.”

“I seem to see even a more urgent and vital angle to this theory. All red-blooded animals are Godlike creations,” remarked Grub.

“Yes, quite right,” said the Doctor. “All intelligent animals, with systems and organs practically like human beings, are in different stages of evolution toward the perfected animal-man. It is extremely ridiculous to say that eyes, ears,

nostrils and mouths were not given to the animals for the same identical reason they were given to men."

"Ha! ha! Caught red-handed," laughed Grub. "This accounts for the christian antagonism towards evolution. Well! Would you sit down and ponder that?"

"Why of course that is all horse-play," said the Doctor. "They confess a knowledge of animal evolution more often than they dispute it.

"For that which befalleth the sons of men befalleth beasts; as the one dieth, so dieth the other; yea, they have all one breath; so that a man hath no preëminence above a beast.

"All go unto one place; all are of the dust and all turn to dust again.

"Who knoweth the spirit of man that goeth upward, and the spirit of the beast that goeth downward to the earth?" (Ecc. 3:19, 20, 21).

"Do you not see that, to acknowledge man as but a higher evolved, red-blooded animal, would be a confession of wilful murder, on the part of the christians, by their having justified the use of animal flesh for food?

"The original scheme of nature was, that the red-blooded animals should live off vegetation. Genesis agrees with this view (Gen. 1:29). But, there is a better evidence; the red-blooded animals have no exchange of excrements as found between the respiratory animals and the vegetation, both in material excrements and the breath.

"It was necessity which caused animals to kill and devour each other, and this includes man. Cannibalism made this necessity a religious rite.

"Jesus Christ, crucified, is but a symbol of cannibalistic sacrifice, otherwise there would be no sense in eating his flesh and drinking his blood," and the Doctor rested to see what impression he had made.

"Doctor, I am now fully convinced that our work is inspired by some unusual mental contact which desires to make some great revelation. In this brief conversation we

have solved a problem which has puzzled every would-be christian. Not a living soul has ever explained the purpose of the wilful sacrifice of the fabulous Christ character—a mere man as a symbol of a false principle. No one has attempted to explain what the great calamity was, from which he was to save humanity and to this day, not one person, allied with the church, can explain why he is thus enthralled.

“It seems plain, here, that it was to save men from being slaughtered, and devoured for food, like other animals.

“The word *sacrifice* is applied to the killing and eating of all animals in the Bible, the altar being the cooking oven. ‘The Lord smelled a sweet savour of cooking flesh’ (Gen. 8:21).

“‘Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar?’ Originally the priests cooked the food for the people on the altar, retaining the choice parts for themselves.

“‘Even so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach the gospel should live of the gospel’ (1 Cor. 9:13, 14).

“This clearly differentiates between a material service and a spiritual service, hence the plea:

“‘If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?’ (1 Cor. 9:11).

“That is very well put, Grub,” said the Doctor, “and it suggests another step in the play. Originally the eucharist was only celebrated by eating fish. The earliest emblem of Jesus was a fish. He chose fishermen as his disciples. Moreover, *Jesus* is but the Greek form of *Joshua*, who was the son of *Nun* meaning a fish. This is growing interesting as it unfolds these secrets,” and the Doctor exhibited his elation by rubbing his hands together.

“I find that the eating of animal flesh for food is especially referred to, following the flood, and it makes no distinction between man and beast.

“‘Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb’ (Gen. 9:3).

"Doctor, this corroborates your theory that necessity caused mankind to take to flesh as food. We have here positive evidence. There could not have been vegetation upon the earth when Noah and his crowd left the ark. They evidently had no vegetable food while in the ark, and had taken to eating the flesh of the animals while yet in the ark. Here is evidence, too, that God is a man, and it was the conscience of man which approved of flesh as food.

" 'And the Lord smelled a sweet savour of cooking flesh' (Gen. 8:21).





"Surely a God with this priestly nose must be an ordinary man," and Grub laughed softly.

"Maybe it would be well for us to scrutinize Noah and his sons. Who are they to be so honored by God, in his murderous slaughter of all other living things on earth?" said the Doctor.

"That isn't a bad idea," said Grub, "for the whole present human race is descended from them. Maybe we can determine whether our ancestors were men or monkeys. Great Caesar! We have solved another hot one. Do you know why the fabulous flood was brought upon the world? Why, to break the line of evolved animals back of the present generations, and demonstrate that man, originally, was a special dispensation.

"Why, of course we did not evolve out of monkeys, when we can so clearly trace man back to Noah, a man who walked with God. I'm going to prove, right here, that the story of Noah and his sons is a myth," and Grub placed his diagrams in order.

"Now follow our waves, Doctor:

-  Noah, the brain.
-  Shem, the flesh.
-  Japheth, the muscles.
-  Ham, the bones.

" 'And I behold, I establish my covenant with you, and with your seed after you' (Gen. 9:9).

"Without difficulty we may identify these characters.

"Noah said, upon awakening from a drunken stupor:

" 'Cursed be Canaan'—Ham stands for Canaan.

" 'God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant' (Gen. 9:27).

"The tent of Shem is the human skin, covering the flesh.

"Japheth is the muscular man beneath the flesh and skin.

"Canaan is the offspring of Ham.

"The skeleton bears all the burdens of the body. Our old ham-bone is no joke.

"*Canaan* means merchandising and trading, and in a broad sense is the servant of the flesh. There is an ulterior significance, having reference to the commerce between the vegetation and the respiratory animals, due to respiration."

"Great guns! Grub. There is no end to these revelations," exclaimed the Doctor. "You have actually uncovered the origin of the *cadeuceus*."

"The skeleton is the staff of *Mercury, the god of commerce and trading*. The flesh and muscles represent the nitrogen and oxygen serpents coiled about it and in common accord. This thing is getting spooky in its revelation of secrets."

"I think we are overlooking something," said Grub. "If this Noah story is all a fable, what about the flood? It must have been of first importance, for more fools have been developed in the christian attempt to vindicate the story of the flood than in trying to prove that an actual Jesus Christ was actually crucified."

"I'll answer that to your satisfaction," replied the Doctor. "To begin with, the capacity of the ark figures out about one-millionth of the space which would properly hold the hosts of respiratory creatures allegedly placed in it, therefore the excrements, in a single day, would have buried the whole outfit in a mountain of dung. There was but a single window in the ark, therefore, all would have died in a few minutes for want of air to breathe.

"Now the ark was supposed to have landed upon Mount Arrarat (Gen. 8:4).

"Grub, it seems a pity that humanity refuses to see the truth even when it slaps it in the face. Mt. Arrarat is 17,000 feet high. Listen to this:

"'Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail and the mountains were covered' (Gen. 7:20).

"Do you get that? About thirty-five feet of water landed the ark on the top of a mountain 17,000 feet high. Can you beat it?

"Yet, when you show this to the average church fanatic, he will insult you, declaring you are reflecting upon the integrity of the holy church, and perhaps curse you because you are not as big a fool as himself. I, myself, heard William Jennings Bryan declare:

"'I believe every word in the Bible is true.'

"And in nineteen hundred, six millions of persons voted for him for president, and in nineteen eight, the same persons, almost to a man, voted for him again, proving conclusively it was a church following doing the voting."

"Haven't you overlooked something, Doctor?" asked Grub.

"What is it?" asked the Doctor.

"Why, the waters rose fifteen cubits. The ark itself was three hundred cubits long, fifty cubits wide and thirty cubits high. Wouldn't you like to see the manipulation of this box, containing specimens in duplicate, or in series, of all the animals of the earth, in thirty-five feet of water?"

"I get you," replied the Doctor, "but let's rest."

"Just a moment, Doctor, while this is fresh in our minds," said Grub. "I want to prove that the gnostic wisdom was well known to the devils who conceived and exploited the fabulous christian scheme.

"*Shem* means name, fame, renown.

"His first offspring was named Elam. *Elam* means a young Levitical priest, a virgin, a secret, and an epoch.

"Thus, about the first step following the fabulous flood which allegedly destroyed all the balance of mankind, was the

cunning suggestion of that brazen, vulgar doctrine of the 'immaculate conception' of Jesus.

"This truly originated in the zealous minds of fanatics.

"*Ham* means zeal, enthusiasm.

"*Japheth* means enlarged, extended."

"I will add a bit to that, Grub, to prove that your theory of concealment of the doctrine of the 'immaculate conception' was long a church secret," and the Doctor stepped to his case and brought therefrom a book.

"Here is my dear old friend Waite, a most courageous writer on the fakes of Christianity. He will tell us the truth.

"Here is what he has to say about the early 'church fathers':

"*Eusebius*—noted for his falsehoods, pious frauds, pious lies. Yet, were he removed as a church father, from church authorities, the church would fall to pieces. It is worth while to read his falsehoods and forgeries on Josephus, Phlegon, Thallus, Poryphyry, and many others.

"*Ignatius* is given credit for the first direct intimation of the 'immaculate conception' as a church doctrine:

"*'There was concealed from the rulers of this world, the virginity of Mary, and the birth of our Lord.'*

"This sly announcement was made more than a thousand years after the alleged birth of Jesus.

"During the most critical age in the destruction of gnosticism by the ecclesiasts, many leading gnostics were bribed or deceived into joining the ranks of the ecclesiasts.

"Eusebius was a gnostic.

"Ignatius was a gnostic.

"Basilides was a gnostic.

"Epiphanius was a gnostic.

"Clement of Rome was a gnostic.

"Meander was a gnostic.

"Saturninus was a gnostic.

"Aristides was a gnostic.

"Quadratus was a gnostic.



"The latter two delivered to Hadrian apologies for the promotion of the christian religion.

"This is positive evidence that the founding of the christian religion was based upon gnosticism at first hand, and it explains why the secret code reveals the gnostic philosophy.

"This was the only way by which the original gnostic organization could be suppressed, by absorbing its leaders into the new ecclesia by promises of greater exploitation of wisdom.

"This surely has been a lesson; now let us rest," and the Doctor and Grub gathered up their materials.

"Don't forget, Doctor, I told you I have taken to pictures, but you beat me to it," laughingly said Grub.

## CHAPTER XVIII

"Grub, I have been examining the subject of the blood, lymph and chyle, to learn why they are not more conspicuous in the Bible," said the Doctor, as he placed some books upon the table.

"Why, there are more than three hundred references to the blood in the Bible, Doctor," exclaimed Grub.

"Yes, that is true, but they give no clue as to what the blood really is, merely referring to it as the 'vital fluid,' the 'life of the flesh.' The same may be said of the lymph or chyle.

"The Bible eternally howls about the shedding of the blood as a vital thing.

"Let us examine this briefly," and the Doctor began to open his books.

"We have previously traced the food materials into the stomach through a positive set of waves. Digestion sets up a spiral process which emulsifies and pushes out the materials for assimilation or excretion.

"The blood receives its nourishing elements from the lymphatic system, which receives them from the intestines during digestion. The newly formed *leucocytes* become the living corpuscles of the blood.

"That this is a regulated exchange between digestion and assimilation, is proven by the simple fact, that, during periods of fasting, no digestive process is going on, and the lymph, instead of being a rich, milky fluid, due to the products of digestion, is a clear colorless fluid—when white and milky, the lymph is called chyle.

"The lymphatic system is quite as elaborate as the blood circulation.

"We here have the evidence that living matter is born out of the waters. We may readily recognize this first constructive step as coming out of the digestive spiral.

*"Lymph means clear water."*

"Now listen to this:

"'Jesus said: I say unto thee, except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God' (John 3:5).

"Here is a subtile lesson, Grub:

"A kingdom is an executive thing, therefore, this has reference to the absorption of the constructive elements into the physical structures.

"The kingdom of God is also heaven. Heaven means the ecclesiastical government. *He* is masculine, *aven* means nothingness, hence a free state, not under the law.

"The spiral, we know, is feminine and symbolizes water, as opposed to the globular. God is masculine.

"The living substance pouring into the blood is from the *lymph*, water, a chemically spiritualized product, in that it is endowed with individual, unit life. In the blood it receives the holy-ghost, it is oxygenized, and distributed to the tissues to form the fleshy body, and come in contact with nervous influences, revealing that the nervous system is the heaven.

"'God is manifested in the flesh' (1 Tim. 3:16).

"'The word was made flesh and dwelt among us' (John 1:14).

"'The word is God' (John 1:1).

"This emphatically proves that the so-called christian God is the life and spirit of living matter, and this spirit is in every living cell striving to find a place in the greater, composite structure, seeking to reveal and manifest its purpose in nature.

"Now I will surely knock the props from under you, Grub. Hold tight:

"Jesus preached:

"'He that believeth on me as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living waters.




"'But this spake he of the spirit, which they that believed on him should receive; for the holy ghost was not yet given because that Jesus was not yet glorified' (John 7:38, 39).

"The abdomen is called the belly. These rivers of waters

signify the lymphatic streams, laden with the living germs, which will become the body of Christ, the muscular system, glorified by being hanged upon the skeleton.

"Naturally these newly created cells are not endowed with nervous filaments, or fibers, therefore they possess no christly powers, as representing a body endowed with conscious mentation, and voluntary action. The Christ principle cannot guide or advise the leucocytes or corpuscles, until they are passed into the circulating blood where they partake of the holy-ghost—the products of respiration. *Holy-ghost* means the breath. They still are not glorified, not yet having direct nervous contact. They have been baptized in water, they must now pass through the baptism of fire, which proves the process is now under the influence of the oxygen wave.

"Upon becoming oxygenized, the corpuscles are carried to the bones, then are returned to the blood in a regenerated state.

"We are now amazed to see that these perfected corpuscles re-enter the blood vessels,  endowed with the spirit , and assume a circular form,  indicating the completion of a cyclic process. This blood plaque is the Christ risen from the grave—the bones. By this process he becomes the son of the carbon man—the bones.

"This is the first resurrection or regeneration.

"‘This is the change and renovation of the soul, by the spirit and grace of God.’

"‘Jesus said: Verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

"‘That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the spirit is spirit.

"‘Marvel not that I said unto thee, you must be born again’ (John 3:5, 6, 7).

"This is called the new birth, which infuses spiritual life into the soul (John 5:25).

"It is also admitted this gives authority and power to

execute judgments 'because he is now the son of man' (John 5:27)."

"I see, I see," said Grub.

"The lymphatic system is the mother; the circulating blood is the son; the nervous system is God, and the whole body is man."

"Yes," replied the Doctor, "your waves have actually guided us to the seat of the so-called Christ principle in our organic body—the heart.

"Look at these illustrations, and realize the significance of this. These systems permeate the whole body.

"I call your attention to something of tremendous importance. We have probably revealed the secret goal of this ecclesiastic system.

"'I have found a ransom';

"'His flesh shall be fresher than a child's; he shall return to the days of his youth' (Job. 33:25)."

"Gee! Doctor, where is this leading us?" exclaimed Grub. "They promise everlasting life in the flesh, a physical state."

"Your waves are doing it, Grub," said the Doctor. "You have said you believe your primary waves are actual living larvae, and you are right; they are.

"'Man is a worm, and the son of man is a worm' (Job 25:6).

"'By his hand God hath garnished the heavens; his hand hath formed a crooked serpent' (Job 26:13). That great worm.

"This has reference to the *gnostic* serpent, the only living creature which can reveal to all mankind the secrets of nature. Through selfish motives, and inborn ignorance, the damned ecclesiasts ruthlessly violated the most sacred trust that was ever placed in the conscience of men. They broke the contacts which were leading mankind toward a state of creative perfection. That this was a premeditated thing is betrayed by the fake flood to wipe out all the old worldly stumbling blocks.

"The name *Noah* means rest, comfort, consolation.

"The nearest approach to this state they have ever at-

tained is their walled, secret dens called monasteries and nunneries—vile beyond conception.”

“You mean too vile for ‘immaculate conception,’” suggested Grub. “You know Mary, the ‘mother of God,’ was a nun.”

“Yes, one is amazed to what length the ecclesiasts went to test the credulity of the ignorant, superstitious people,” said the Doctor, reaching for the “*History of Christian Religion*,” by Waite.

“Grub, you may not be familiar with Biblical fables, or you would know that much of the stuff is purposely made fabulous to conceal gruesome facts. It required many centuries to nail down the vulgar doctrine of the ‘immaculate conception.’ Not until the middle of the nineteenth century was it finally canonized as a permanent church doctrine. There was an extraordinary reason for not making this flimsy, unnatural thing conspicuous in controversy. Early errors had to be covered up and kept concealed.

“Some time you must read the apocryphal gospels, Grub. *Apocrypha* means concealed, hidden, secret—in simple, suppressed, although as fully canonized, and official, as the balance of the Bible.”

“Pardon me for interrupting, Doctor, but I don’t want this to escape, and here is an appropriate place to mention it,” said Grub. “Back there, in your lecture, you mentioned Jesus having referred to the ‘scripture.’ Isn’t it well established that the scripture of the new testament did not appear until about three hundred years after the alleged time of Christ?”

“Certainly,” replied the Doctor, “and raw changes, interpolations, and ‘pious frauds’ have been inserted since its introduction. Why, the book of ‘Revelation’ in the new testament was not inserted in the Bible until the year 1672.

“As late as the seventeenth century men were burned at the stake for daring to criticize the absurd doctrine of the ‘immaculate conception,’ long before it had been accepted and legalized by the church.

"The false-pretense was a raw thing, and carried a hard kick-back. The world did not readily accept the fake, and to save the face of the priesthood, Mary was put onto old Joseph, and he had to swallow his dose. Finally the whole thing hinged upon a dream (Matt. 1:20)."

"Say! I see some more funny angles in this, Doctor," said Grub.

"Abraham is named as the father of Jesus Christ.

"In Matt. 1:1, David is named the father of Jesus Christ.

"In Matt. 1:20, Joseph is called the son of David.

"This makes Jesus the son of his own brother. But, an interpretation by the code reveals a vulgar suggestion:

"*David* means carnal love.

"*Joseph* means increase.

"*Jesus* means an immaculate priesthood.

"*Mary* means rebellion.

"Now, what conclusion may be drawn from this?

"It was rebellion against civil restraints which carried the priesthood behind monastic walls.

"Priests are forbidden to marry. What decent excuse can be made for also carrying women into this so-called monastic life? But one—to raise up an 'immaculate' tribe.

"England and France had sufficient regard for national decency to break up these dens of iniquity, expel their inmates, and confiscate their property.

"You can conclude, from this, that the original ecclesia believed in the gnostic theory, that nature intended that perfected humanity should rise superior to the necessity of organized community life, and governmental restraints, as a normal goal of mental evolution. Ecclesiasticism conceived the idea of hastening the process, but finding civil governments strongly established, they skulk behind their protecting, monastic walls, awaiting the day when revolutions will weaken the theory of organized government. Hence they carry out their idea in seclusion and secrecy. They could not mingle their sacred blood with that of the common herd, nor become obedient to the normal laws of men.

“Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

“But after that faith is come, we are no longer under the law.

“For ye are the children of God by faith in Jesus Christ.

“And if ye be Christs’ then are ye Abraham’s seed’ (Gal. 3).

“Christ is the end of the law to every one that believeth’ (Rom. 10:4).

“Has the church ever attempted to put this into practice? Well, read the history of the law of England, called the ‘Benefit of Clergy’ with its senseless ‘neck-verse,’ the first verse of the fifty-first Psalm. When a follower of the church desired to commit a crime, even up to murder, he committed to memory this ‘neck-verse.’ If apprehended and arraigned, he was represented in the court by a priest. Upon repeating the ‘neck-verse’ he was released to the church which branded him in the hand as belonging to it.”

“Yes, that is but one of many such attempts to override civil governments. The people of the United States should take cognizance of the many brazen utterances of defiance by the churches, in recent years.

“Things which would be treasonable in private citizens are ignored when uttered by the church. The indifference on the part of government officials begins to smack of connivance,” said the Doctor.

“The fact that our conversations tend to lead us into a discussion of the Bible, convinces me that some ulterior mental guide is proving to us that it is a synopsis of the gnostic wisdom, concealed in fable, symbolisms, and personifications in code,” declared Grub.

“I, too, am so convinced,” replied the Doctor; “but I think we have enough to inspire some original thought for this sitting.” And the Doctor arose, took his books, and placed them upon their shelves.

“My cue seems to be that, the ecclesiasts have learned most of their astronomy from a study of the gnostic philosophy,



especially physiology, and they have attempted to personify elements and principles," said Grub.

"Let us then think along that line," replied the Doctor.

## CHAPTER XIX

"Doctor, I had thought of suggesting a trip to Egypt, but I have altogether changed my mind," said Grub.

"Well, I have lost interest in the travel stuff, myself," responded the Doctor.

"You probably hold the same feeling that I do, since we know that the thrill of actual travel is but a physical irritation, as compared with our exercises of mind," said Grub.

"I believe I understand what you mean, but if you have any demonstrations I will gladly be the audience this morning," replied the Doctor.

"Well, I have fully concluded that, while in a trance state, the nervous impulse is withdrawn or, at least, is suspended, with regard to waking, physical sensation," said Grub.

"Why, we long ago agreed upon that, knowing that no physical pain is experienced during an operation under the influence of magnetism," said the Doctor. "There is no particular merit in our pretending to take these mental journeys when we know all that we vision comes to us directly from the universal medium.

"Father time, or Cronus, merely awakens the universal memory at the expression or suggestion of our desire.

"You have it right; but I can go you one better," said Grub, with his usual good-natured grin.

"It was in my mind to take a trance journey to Egypt, and the countries most conspicuously mentioned in the Bible, to find to what extent the monks had drawn upon fable for the foundation of the jumbled story of the old testament.

"It is not essential for us to assume a trance state to examine this, for I find the secret code fully explains it. There is ample evidence that this alleged Hebrew history was all coined out of the imaginative minds of monks—even much of the history we have long taught in our schools.

"It would be tedious to repeat this fabulous history, intermingled with confusing facts, therefore I have merely

made a list of countries, places, names and numerous things, and interpreted these, in their significance, by the use of the secret code," and Grub spread some written pages upon the table.

"First, I want to impress the fact that ecclesiasticism bumped into an unexpected obstacle in its fiendish purpose to suppress gnosticism and confiscate its wisdom. These devilish monks were an organized militant body. The outcome was they had to be absorbed into the Christian scheme, and it was they who worked out the secret ecclesiastical code to conceal gnosticism.

"The principal story begins with the so-called middle monarchy of Egypt, with the invasion and conquest of Egypt by the Hyksos or shepherd-kings, sun-worshippers of Syria.

"Now, Doctor, here is a beautiful fake. They were alleged to be the foes of civilization, and were accused of destroying all the monuments they found. This is wholly intended to account for the disappearance of many monuments named in the Biblical fable, to give semblance of truth to fake history, and age to the christian scheme.

"The alleged Hyksos period began about sixteen hundred years before the christian scheme was introduced.

"'King Aahmes knew not Joseph,' and, as a curious fact the name of this king does not respond to the code.

"I give these names in consecutive order, as they appear in the written history of that alleged historical period.

"The very fact that these names respond to the concealing code, in this consecutive manner, is all the evidence necessary to prove a sinister purpose.

*"Egypt = oppression, misery, tribulations.*

*"Syria = the Hebrew Aram, an ancestor of Christ = exaltation.*

*"Ammon = the people, inquisitorial torture by David (2 Sam. 12:31).*

*"Am-mon also means Am—a female deity, and mon—man.*

"*Thebes* = classical name of *No-Amon*, meaning true, faithful, artificer, protector.

"No = stirring up, forbidding place.

"*Hatasu* = smiting, conquering.

"*Meggido* = overcrowded.

"*Philistia* = villagers, colonization.

"*Gaza* = strong, wickedness, goat = prolific breeding.

"*Euphrates* = fructifying, fruitful, profitable.

"*Hittites* = superstitious fear, fearful.

"*Carchemish* = the subduer, national god of the people, civil ruler.

"*Assyria* = consolation. *Assir* = prison, fetters.

"*Rameses* = thunder, that destroys evil.

"*Pharaoh* = that discovers and disperses, the revenger.

"*Exodus* = going out, separation, ruled by law, legislation.

"*Moses* = *Mo* = water = a multitude of laws; *ses* = drawn out.

"*Israel* = Church of Christ, the light of the sun. *Is* = the light of *ra* = the sun, *el* = the first cause.

"*Succoth* = a tabernacle, a church structure. The christians were not permitted to erect churches until the decree of Constantine, A. D. 321. This decree also permitted the giving of gifts to the church.

"*Etham* = their strength or sign. *Eth* = favor, *am* = female deity. *Mary* means the church. Mary is called the 'mother of God.'

"*Pihahiroth* = the mouth, the opening of liberty, free speech.

"*Migdol* = greatness, a tower, proud and lofty men, Jesus Christ.

"*Baal-zephon* = secrecy, that sees and observes.

"*Libya* = the heart of the sea, understanding, purpose.

"*Amun* = mystery, concealment, clandestine, underhand.

"*David* = carnal love. Father of Jesus Christ (Matt. 1:1). David became enamored with the wife of Uriah, and forcibly outraged her and she bore him a bastard child. God killed the child and forgave David. David then killed Uriah

and took his wife as a concubine. Her name was Bath-sheba or Bath-shua, meaning the well of the oath or wealth. *Uriah* means light, knowledge.

"*'Carnal love' destroys knowledge and confiscates wealth.*

"*Solomon* = son of David by Bathsheba. *Solomon* means recompense. *Sol* = sun, *om* = sun, *on* = sun.

"*Shishak* = holding the bag.

"*Jeroboam* = fighting against increasing the people.

"*Rehoboam* = the emancipator.

"*Judea* = praise, approval.

"*Asa* = physician, healer.

"*Shobach* = net, captivity.

"*Hoshea* = salvation, deliverance, rescue.

"*Joshua* = increased wealth.

"*Shalmaneser* = leniency, mercy.

"*Terhakah* = exalted enquirer.

"*Sennacherib* = solitude, care, trouble, anxiety.

"*Hezekiah* = support of the Lord, strength of God.

"*Esarhaddon* = conquering, finding joy.

"*Josiah* = God heals, the Lord burns.

"*Necho* = a smitten land.

"*Cyrus* = the sun.

"*Persia* = the destroyer.

"*Alexander* = a defender.

"*King* = a tribe.

"*Macedon* = extended.

"*Corinth* = ornamenting, decoration.

"*Cyprus* = fairness, impartial.

"*Cilicia* = revolution.

"*Pamphylia* = a mixture of nations.

"*Mesopotamia* = abundance.

"*Semitic* = name, fame, renown.

"*Accadia* = fortified, strengthened, prepared.

"*Tartary* = darkness, ignorance, misery.

"*Nimrod* = rebellion, insurrection, revolt.

"*Babel* = mixture, confusion, disorder, disorganization.

"*Chedorlaomer* = a generation of servitude, advantage.

"*Elamite* = a young priest, a virgin, a secret, an epoch.

"*Abraham* = a high-priest.

"*Damascus* = a sockfull of blood, similitude of burning.

"*Syria* = sublime deceit, trickery, ensnare, delude, entrap.

"*Arabia* = ambush, betrayal.

"*Tigris* = vicious command, sharp voice, authority.

"*Euphrates* = fruitful, profitable.

"*Tyrians* = powerful, entrenched.

"*Ur* = fire, region of God's power.

"*Chaldea* = demons, robbers.

"*Media* = meditation.

"That's the code story, Doctor.

"This is where it seems to end its continuity as a history of actual events and places.

"It is clean-cut fake history, and I challenge any authority to refute this."

"Where did you get this, Grub?" asked the Doctor. "It is the most convincing indictment against the church I have yet heard."

Grub placed a book before the Doctor, saying: "Read this history for your own edification. You may check up my lists of interpretations as you read:

#### ANCIENT HISTORY

*A Sketch of the History of Egypt, Mesopotamia, Greece and Rome*

by LIONEL W. LYDE, M. A.

Classical Exhibitioner and Modern History Prize-Essayist of  
Queen's College, Oxford

Senior English Master at Merchiston Castle School,  
Edinburgh (London)

The Doctor slowly read this title and wagged his head.

"Now, Doctor, these names are all found in the Bible and are thus coded in the ecclesiastic code. Was this history adjusted to the code, or was the code adjusted to the history? You will observe that this peculiarity practically ceases at this point, and deals with the fabulous history of this particular Egyptian region. It does not occur in his history of Greece, or with modern history.

"It is significant, too, that it covers a territory in which monastic life thrived, directly preceding the christian exploitation. In every hole in the ground which could be called a cave, the dirty monks lived like wild animals. I give it as my opinion, Doctor, that none of this history is consecutively authentic.

"One would-be historian, after another, has repeated this tommy-rot until it has become as fixed as the fabulous Hebrew scripture. I believe this all existed before Genesis was dreamed of.

"And at this point I must call your attention to a singular coincidence—let us call it that.

"The name Lionel Lyde, in a measure, responds to the code.

"*Lion* = seeing, *el* = God. Seeing God.

"*Lyde* is closely cognate with *Lydda*, meaning *strife*. Place whatever significance upon this you choose."

"Just a moment, Grub. Let's look up that word *Lydda*," and the Doctor opened his concordance. "Ah, here it is, an alleged place in the territory of Benjamin. That settles it. Benjamin is the protection, and go-getter of spoils, for Israel, the church of Christ (Gen. 49:27). This, too, is significant. *Lydda* is *Lod*, or *Lud*, meaning *strife*, and he is the son of *Shem* (Gen. 10:22)."

"I do not find the name Lyde among the illustrious writers," said Grub.

"This is interesting, and fits into your theory of fake history which destroys things which never existed," said the Doctor. "In trying to locate *Lydda* I find it was destroyed by that ravenous destroyer, Saladin, alleged sultan of Syria. On the spot stands the church of St. George. It is easy, now, to understand why *Lod* means strife. St. George's emblem is a jolly old priest fighting a dragon—the dragon is that old serpent of yours, Grub—wisdom. This little digression had led to something. This St. George's church is still called *Ludd*, and is allegedly located somewhere about Jaffa."

"The dragon-headed horse of Thibet carries on his back the books of the law."

"We will make a note of this and go deeper into it at some future time. I will finish my lesson," said Grub.

"Well, what are your final deductions?" asked the Doctor.

"I conclude that, if this is true history, it proves that christianity is a rank fraud, and that the ecclesiasts adjusted their secret code to these names to forge a history for the christian scheme to give it priority in origin over modern nations, as it forged genealogies to antedate the people in authority at the time they introduced the christian church. The whole scheme was to establish a prior claim to government, and authority over all the peoples of the world—a universal religio-political control, with the head of the ecclesia as 'king of kings' and 'lord of lords.'

"If it is not authentic history, it has been forged in more recent periods to deceive and mislead humanity.

"The fact that the code does not continue on into modern history is ample evidence of duplicity, for if the Biblical story is historical truth, why should not the same system be a continuous story.

"The pretense that mankind suddenly awakened to discover that God had not manifested himself to men over a period of untold ages, including thousands of years of high civilization, is pitiful in its rank false-pretense. It was actually necessary to re-mould humanity by reducing it to a state of abject ignorance to adjust it to the ecclesiastic scheme of human development. A meaner, more contemptible, purpose never entered the minds of men, than the idea of destroying the unit system of nature and reducing humanity to a plastic mass to be molded, at will, into a militant mob.

"The fact that it is a thing aloof from authentic human progression, and intrudes its abnormal theories upon legitimate civil governments, is ample reason why it should be rudely suppressed.

"The fact that it swaths itself in mystery, and suggestive secrecy, ensconcing itself behind stone walls, and locked doors,



is a challenge to honest, open governments, and is sufficient to justify a conscientious government demanding that these self-posed institutions throw wide open the doors of their dens for full inspection and explanation.

"The most illogical thing in the United States, is the fact that these monasteries and nunneries, with their secret manufacturing outfits, are permitted to continue, hidden and cloaked beneath an outward pretense of charity, enjoying a liberty and freedom not granted to the common citizens, and free of taxation, and government inspection.

"Shall we pose as legal guardians of these institutions, and insult the best judgment of England and France, who suppressed them, and confiscated their properties, on ample grounds of treason?

"The United States would better open its eyes wide. There is an invisible power heading this nation for a hard fall. If it does not lay a drastic hand upon the powerful interstate organizations which now dominate our legislative bodies, and stand as the balance of power in political influences, a revolution, such as the world has never before experienced, is inevitable."

"Grub!" exclaimed the Doctor, "your indictment is strong and unanswerable, but you are too late. Organization is the key to the situation. It has always been the two-edged sword of ecclesiasticism. It kept the nations of Europe disorganized for centuries, while the popes of Rome, with their organized, militant mobs, dictated to the sovereigns of Europe, crowning kings, and kicking their crowns from their cowardly heads, to show their contempt for them.

"The organizations in the United States, today, are so strongly entrenched, they may not be quickly suppressed. The militant mobs of the middle ages are now the paid claqueurs of the system.

"Nature corrects these abnormal things in her own peculiar ways.

"The greatest fear in the ecclesiastic heart, today, in the United States, is that it has pressed natural laws too far.

Reaction is as powerful as action. Reaction is as manifest in this nation as day and night.

"The people have been pressed beyond mental endurance. Insanity, crime and poverty have come to the front with horrid audacity. They stand grinning, and eager to pounce upon those powers which have been forcing them over the precipice. The militant mobs are now merging into madness, which knows neither reason nor fear. Grub, these ghastly forces will override all law and rend this nation. It is inevitable, and vindicates nature.

"While this is highly interesting in connection with our studies it is taking us away from your main theme. I will let you return now to your similitudes," said the Doctor.

"Well, as I have previously said," began Grub, "there is every evidence that christianity is a disguised nature-worship, with personified executive forces. They have personified every visible thing of consequence in nature. Moreover, to suppress them, or utilize them, they have unblushingly plagiarized every important doctrine of previous religions available for their purpose, revamping them for their uses. Nevertheless, they give preference to visible natural phenomena, a clean-cut nature-worship in disguise, to enable them to secretly confiscate the traditional nature study by the gnostics.

"You may add the following convincing symbolism to the long list we have examined:

"The sun is God.

" 'For the Lord God is a sun' (Ps. 84:11).

" 'Jehovah the most high over the earth' (Ps. 83:18).

"The light of the sun is Christ.

" 'I am the light of the world' (John 8:12).

" 'The moon is the 'church of God' (Songs 6:10).

" 'The earth is producing mankind' (Gen. 6:11).

"The system makes chosen men on earth gods, to represent God in heaven.

"An analysis of the word *heaven* demonstrates it signifies the visible expanse above. *He* is the prefix to make the term

heaven masculine as distinguished from the earth feminine—mother earth. *Aven* means nothingness, empty space.

“‘And the Lord said unto Moses, see, I have made thee a God to Pharaoh, and Aaron, thy brother, shall be thy prophet’ (Exodus 7:1).

“He had previously made Moses God unto Aaron.

“It is upon this the church bases its right to make and unmake kings and dictate their duties.

“This makes it quite clear that the christian God is but the chief or head of the clan. King means clan or tribe.

“*Moses* means a multitude of laws.

“Hence the law dictates as a God to kings.

“*Aaron* means the teacher.

“Hence the law is God to the teacher.

“Both Moses and Aaron are high-priests.

“The church allows no debate upon the question of its assumed original authority.

“The fact is, it requires no argument to prove endless fraud, and false-pretense, in an attempt to establish the doctrine of infallibility in the declarations of super church authority.

“I am just now interested in the church error of falsifying history as evidence to favor its inconsistent attitude toward established civil governments.”

“That makes travel seem trivial,” remarked the Doctor.

“Just a few more accusing symbolisms and I will end the story,” said Grub.

“*Clouds* mean concealment, mystery.

“*Wind* means war.

“*Rain* means doctrines.

“*Dew* means conversions.

“*Waters* mean a multitude of peoples and laws.

“*Fire* means judgments.

“*Lightning* means vengeance.

“*Earthquakes* mean revolutions.

“That is quite sufficient, Doctor, for one lesson. In view of these exposures, any one who still declares that he believes

the ecclesiastical exploitation is an honorable thing, is either a sycophant, indifferent fool, profiting by this belief, or is a knave, dangerous to society."

"I am compelled to agree with you, Grub, but now let us rest," said the Doctor.

## CHAPTER XX

"I'm a bit sluggish this morning, Grub. I'd rather listen than talk," said the Doctor, as he took a restful position in a comfortable arm-chair.

"Very well, Doctor, I will try to amuse you," replied Grub. "I have been examining the early chapters in Genesis, and I must confess, I become more and more puzzled that the Bible has so long been permitted to remain in circulation, viewed from its literary aspect, for it cannot be of educational value, and teaches little of value as to religion. Nevertheless, beneath its simplicity is great mystery—and concealment of ulterior things, both good and evil.

"I will merely recite some of the absurd inconsistencies found in its reading, without drawing you into a discussion. Now listen to these and laugh.

"First, I want to call your attention to the fact, that, the first ten words in the Bible reveal the whole church scheme reduced to two words. Moreover, the words 'God' and 'heaven' in the original, are in the plural, 'Gods' and 'heavens.'

"'In the beginning God created the *heaven* and the *earth*' (Gen. 1:1).

"*Heaven* means the ecclesiastical government.

"*Earth* means producing mankind.

"This specifically betrays that the original intent was to establish a universal, theocratic, super-control and authority over mankind and his productive powers.

"This absurd statement, that the fabulous heaven and the earth are practically the whole of basis creation, disputes the science of astronomy.

"Moreover, the suggestion of a beginning in the planetary creation, which is available for the scrutiny of man, to enable him to specify a beginning, is pitifully childish.

"Only one construction may be put upon this first verse of Genesis, and that is the one which is revealed by the secret code.

"I challenge the church to refute my deduction.

"There are so many simple-minded inconsistencies found in the diction of the Bible, one cannot have a respect for its literal reading.

"But, when read with understanding, it is a clean-cut conspiracy.

"In Genesis 1:4, God divided the light from the darkness. This was on the first day of the creation, and he had not made the sun, moon, nor stars. Therefore we may only look for the figurative significance of *light* and *darkness*.

"*Light*, in this instance, means intellect, knowledge, understanding, education.

"*Darkness* means ignorance, misery, adversity.

"Only one construction may be put upon this. It means a premeditated separation of the educated class from the uneducated masses. History proves it. For a thousand years greater humanity was smothered in enforced ignorance. The period between 486 and 1495 is branded in the forehead of every ecclesiast.

"In Gen. 1:16, 17, 18, God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night.

"This was on the fourth day.

"Before he had made the sun, he had alternating light and darkness, which he named day and night.

"'God called the light *day* and the darkness he called *night*, and the evening and the morning were the first day' (Gen. 1:5).

"Now, can you explain that?

"It's absurd enough that they make the earth before they make the sun.

"You will observe also that they begin their day with the evening instead of the morning, which is another evidence that this evening was the approaching darkness of ignorance—the 'dark ages.'

"I especially call your attention to God having created the heaven. Where did he reside previous to this? It adds

materially to corroborate the code significance of heaven as the ecclesiastical government.

“‘God is power and authority.’

“Genesis agrees with science, that animal life begins in the waters. The tendency for the fishes to rise and fly in the air intimates that this evolution includes the birds. Whereas in Gen. 2:19, the earth is given credit for producing the fowl of the air. Why these contradictions?

“In Gen. 1:29, 30, both man and beast is given vegetation for food, but God refused the vegetable offerings of Cain, the tiller of the soil, and accepted the mutton of Abel, the herdsman, thus setting the example for men to eat the flesh of animals. This was cold-blooded, premeditated murder. But the clearer significance is that the ecclesia is supported by the priesthood.

“You will remember our lesson, Doctor, suggesting the creation of forms before their material manifestation, as a man conceives a thing in his mind before he makes it. Clearly the makers of Genesis held this same idea, and their materials were humanity at large.

“‘God created every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew’ (Gen. 2:5).

“This is a human process, and preceded the forming of man from the *dust of the ground*, meaning the storm breath, feebleness, countless numbers.

“Even the grass, and seed-bearing herbs, and fruit-bearing trees, preceded the creation of the sun. This is imbecilic. Without moisture and sunlight, vegetation is impossible.

“Why does a nation permit such fabulous stuff to continue in circulation by a powerful organization, thus deliberately deceiving the people for selfish ends?

“I find an extraordinary contradiction in the second chapter of Genesis.

“God forbade man to partake of the tree of knowledge, saying:

“‘For in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die’ (Gen. 2:17).

“Now this thing they call God must have known he was uttering a lie, or else he is not all-knowing, for man did partake, and he did not die, but became a God.

“In Gen. 3:4, the serpent declared to them: ‘Ye shall not surely die. Ye shall become as gods.’

“This proves conclusively that gods were the educated priests—ordinary men.

“The evidence comes out of the mouth of God himself:

“‘Behold the man has become as one of *us*’ (Gen. 3:22).

“So God kicked Adam out of the Garden of Eden—the place of culture, the university life, to prevent his partaking of the tree of everlasting life—education, the gnostic wisdom, which alone can free him from the lower animals.

“In the translation of the Bible from the earliest manuscripts, a ‘pious fraud’ was perpetrated. In the first and second chapters of Genesis, the plural ‘gods’ was uniformly translated into the singular ‘God,’ and ‘the Adam,’ meaning the earth, was translated into ‘Adam.’

“There is a very good reason why mankind at large was ignorant of these frauds. It was fifteen hundred years after the introduction of christianity before the Bible was available, even to learned men, and then, burning at the stake threatened one found with a Bible in his possession.

“Now, Doctor, I am confirmed in my belief, that the Genesis story reveals that the ecclesiastic priesthood was originally familiar with the gnostic wisdom, which teaches that the final purpose of nature was to perfect a permanent physical life, with a universal mental contact. It was the selfish purpose of this priesthood to acquire this exalted position, and to shut out from it the masses of people.

“Here is another funny error: ‘Adam heard the *voice* of God *walking* in the garden in the *cool* of the day.’

“The word *voice* is cognate with the Hebrew *Bath-kol*. *Bath* means well, or the mouth; *kol* is voice or word. There-



fore, Adam heard the hole, out of which God's voice issued, walking in the garden.

"Don't you think, Doctor, Adam, in this particular flight of imagination, was a wine-soaked priest, walking in the monastic garden to cool off?

"Here are some interesting items.

"'God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept' (Gen. 2:21).

"Do you know that God never awakened Adam? Who did?

"God never forbade Eve's partaking of knowledge while in the Garden of Eden, because it was before she was made of Adam's rib—the crescent moon cast off the side of the earth. It becomes essential to adopt the moon to symbolize the church, because it is in contact with the universal forces.

"God told the serpent he should travel on his stomach for undeceiving Eve. How had he previously traveled?

"Gen. 3:20: Adam called his wife *Eve*, because she was the mother of all living—yet neither the original female half of Adam, nor Eve, had borne children. The fishes, birds and beasts were made before Adam. Was Eve the mother of all these?

"Gen. 3:19: God declared that Adam had come out of the dust of the earth, and should return to it.

"Do you see what this is leading to? It is intended to make man a special dispensation, that he may not discredit the priesthood by his likeness.

"They are playing with the gnostic wisdom.

"*Adam* is the earth. In the code he means earthy. *Eve* is life. They produce vegetation and animal life. They are but symbolical personalities. In the beginning they were dressed in leaves—the leaves of vegetation.

"In Genesis 3:21, God made them coats of skins—the animal covering.

"Was God a tailor, or did he have a Jew tailor in his employ?

"Now see what happens:

"Gen. 4:1: '*Adam*—the earth—knew his wife—*Eve*—life, and she conceived and bore Cain.

"Cain is the vegetation, in 'possession' of the earth by contact. As a 'fugitive' he is the wild, spreading, uncultivated vegetation.

"It is again peculiar that God drove out the man from the Garden of Eden, but says nothing about driving out the woman. This is gnostic. Eve is life and desire. Not even the priesthood would surrender these normal elements—hence the nunneries.

"In Gen. 3:22 is a clear intimation that by some secret process man may acquire eternal life, but not necessarily a physical state of being. This is another evidence that the priesthood sought to rise to this degree of perfection through secret intellectual training at the expense of greater humanity.

"Gen. 4:17: Cain knew his wife and she bore *Enoch*, meaning dedicated, devoted, consecrated, apportioned.

"This could only apply to the apportionment of vegetation for the priesthood and the masses, for there was no woman whom Cain could call his wife but 'mother earth.'

"Adam had previously begotten *Abel*, the atmosphere, breath for the respiratory animals.

"Cain was a tiller of the earth.

"Abel was a keeper of sheep.

"Here is the explanation in code or symbol.

"Cain was the common leader of the masses, civil government, cultivating the earthy people, the producing humanity. *Earth* means the producer.

"*Abel*, the breath, symbolized the keeper of the temple, the priesthood—the atmosphere.

"*Sheep* mean disciples or followers of the leader. Christ declares he is a shepherd (John 10:11).

"The herbs and grass symbolize the lower classes; the trees symbolize the higher classes, the great nobles—the sycophant church followers.

"Cain's offspring was not acceptable to God, because of its being material.

"Abel's offspring was acceptable, because it was spiritual—the priesthood lives in his own exclusive atmosphere and environment.

"God blessed his disciples but he did not bless the common herd.

"All of this is a concealed lesson in gnosticism. We have previously had a peep into it in our gnostic examination of the human body.

"The seat of God is the brain.

"The Garden of Eden is the thorax.

"The earth is the abdomen and pelvic region.

"God refused to assimilate the solid vegetable food offered by Cain, but accepted the vibratory food of Abel.

"Do you get this, Doctor? The solids went to sustain the earthy tissues of the body, that is, to build the temple, the human body, and the vibratory was assimilated by the mental processes, in the brain, lungs and heart.

"Let us see what this system produces.

"Adam again knew his wife, and she bare him Seth.

"Eve exclaimed: 'God has appointed me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew.' This was because Abel was the breath, having no power of material reproduction. The inhalation of the vegetation, destroyed the atmosphere as the breath of animals, carrying the nitrogen of the atmosphere into the earth.

"'And to Seth, to him also there was born a son, and he called his name Enos. Then began men to call upon the name of the Lord' (Gen. 4:26).

"Vegetation could not call upon the Lord.

"*Seth* means compensation, respiration, and symbolizes the respiratory animals.

"*Enos* means mortal man, subject to temptation and fall.

"Now, Doctor, this is a confession that, in this creative scheme, this so-called God premeditatedly planned the fall of mankind into a sinful state as a part of the exploitation, by cunning temptation.

"But that which is of greater importance is, that the first

line created, up to Seth, was vegetation. Seth is the beginning of the respiratory animal life. The meaning of Seth, compensation, reveals this. The animals breathe *oxygen* and exhale *carbon dioxide*. The vegetation inhales *carbon dioxide* and exhales *oxygen*.

"Out of Seth evolutes *Enos*, meaning mortal man, subject to temptation and fall, being made subject to temptation and fall by God himself.

"This is why the church attempts to suppress evolution.

"We may now understand why two distinct lines come out of Adam, the line of Cain, and the line of Seth: the one is the vegetation, the other the animal life, which terminates with man.

"Hence we read with understanding:

"'And so it is written. The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.

"'Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual?

"'The first is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven' (1 Cor. 15).

"The genealogy of Jesus Christ is not of the line of *Cain*, possession, but of the line of *Seth*, compensation—compensation between the body and the brain.

"*Possession* means ownership.

"*Compensation* means remuneration, exchange.

"'Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things live of the things of the temple?' (1 Cor. 9:13).

"'Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you? (1 Cor. 3:16).

"'What? Know ye not that your body is the temple of the holy-ghost which is in you, which ye have of God?' (1 Cor. 6:19).

"Here is a distinction between the seat of God and the seat of the holy-ghost.

"The brain is the seat of God.

"The lungs are the seat of the holy-ghost.

"The heart is the seat of Christ.

"Now, Doctor, we have located the bodies of the God, Christ and holy-ghost principles in the human being, and we identify them as *thought, speech and action*.

"God is mentation in the brain.

"Christ is circulation in the heart.

"The holy-ghost is the breath, respiration."

"We are getting closer to our goal with each lesson, Grub," softly said the Doctor. "I suppose you see also that you have explained the riddle of Christ being the son of both God and man. There are two complete systems involved in the composition of the man. The head, and the brain and nervous system, are one, and the body, and the heart and circulatory system the other. Christ is in the sympathetic nerves as a part of the God principle. Hence Jesus says:

"'My father and I are one.'

"He means his godly father.

"After all, the whole christian theme is but a concealed gnostic romance.

"It is easy to see why humanity was raped by the ambitious ecclesiastic priesthood, and debased into imbecilic ignorance. They aspired to a monopoly of all learning that they could commercialize it as a means of support."

"Yes, Doctor, and they wilfully set the example for governments to follow in the commercialization of crime," said Grub.

"The church originated, lives, thrives and has its whole being in evil. It must cultivate and continue evil or go out of business. But, to save its own face, it must inspire and sustain civil governments in the same game, and secretly connive in the cultivation of evil. This is reflected by the multitude of laws being passed by legislative bodies, drawing all humanity into a criminal net.

"They confess this:

"'Now we know that whatsoever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law; that every mouth may be stopped, and all may become guilty' (Rom. 3:19).

"Thus free speech must be muzzled, and all men must be legislated into crime.

"Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified, for by the law is the knowledge of sin' (Rom. 3:20).

"This theory of the law is a clean-cut treason against the spirit of the constitution of the United States.

"There is a definite purpose in the smothering of this nation in criminal laws.

" 'The law worketh wrath; for where no law is there is no transgression' (Rom. 4:15).

" 'Sin is the transgression of the law' (1 Jno. 3:4).

" 'Wrath bringeth forth strife' (Prov. 30:33).

" 'An angry man stirreth up strife, and a furious man aboundeth in transgression' (Prov. 29:22).

" 'He that is soon angry dealeth foolishly' (Prov. 14:17).

"Do you see the awful thing, Doctor?

"The whole nation must be teased and tormented to anger, that they may be driven to evil by vicious laws to engender wrath, anger, and insane acts, in order that the cruel, arbitrary hand of the law may grasp and punish them.

"Why cannot the people understand, that each new criminal law added to the already numberless laws, adds a whole new class of criminals to the appalling list, and increases the powers of irritation and provocation.

"This is why the nation is going mad. Crime, taxation and insanity are consuming the masses.

"There is little distinction to be made between indulgences and the imposing of untold millions in fines under the law, in so far as the commercialization of evil is concerned. Both systems rest upon the capitalization of human credulity, and human mental frailty. Now, Doctor, I will stop and give you a rest."

"Just a moment, Grub," said the Doctor. "I have been thinking as you talked. I heard all you said, nevertheless, I have a question to ask. You have, undoubtedly, located the seat of the living principle which the ecclesiasts name the

Christ. Explain exactly how this principle communicates with us without speaking through a third person."

"That is made very clear in several parts of the Bible," replied Grub.

"'And the Lord spake unto you out of the midst of the fire; ye heard the voice of the words, but saw no similitude, only ye heard a voice' (Deut. 4:12).

"You remember we determined that the seat of fire in the human anatomy was the heart. Christ is symbolized by the oxygen wave. This voice was coming from the heart, but without similitude of spoken words. The difference between this voice, and the spoken voice, is explained as a shout, in Joshua 6:10. Now, remember, Joshua is Jesus, who says: 'My father and I are one.'

"Jesus asks: 'Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my words' (John 8:43). Conclusively proving that Jesus did not verbally preach to the people.

"Samuel explains the process:

"'The Lord called Samuel, and he answered, Here am I.

"'And he ran unto Eli, and said, Here am I; for thou calledst me. And he said, I called not; lie down again, and he went and lay down.

"'And the Lord called yet again, and again Eli declared he did not call, and again bade him lie down.

"'Now Samuel did not yet know the Lord, neither the word of the Lord yet revealed unto him' (1 Sam. 3).

"Then Eli proceeded to teach Samuel to come in contact with the Lord.

"Now, Jesus is the 'word of God' (Rev. 19:13) and that means the subconscious mind. Samuel was not familiar with the workings of the subconscious mind, hence he knew not the Lord. That is why Eli bade him lie down. He thus assumed the trance state.

"The gospel of the new testament did not exist at the alleged time that Jesus was on earth.

"We heard Cronus speaking to us while in a subconscious state. No matter by what name, the principle is the same.

The ecclesiasts choose to personify it and call it Jesus, or Christ. We call it Cronus; both signify the subconscious mind."

"Grub, that is the clearest explanation you have made. I know, now, beyond further doubt, that in order to bring ourselves into understanding contact with the universal mentation we must exercise and cultivate a control over our subconscious mind," and the Doctor looked very thoughtful.

"Yes, Doctor," continued Grub, "and here is the essence of it. Our experience with Cronus was a vital thing. We awakened suppressed memory. Memory is the all-important contact. Memory, like time, knows all the past. If we could vividly recall our dreams while we sleep, we would reveal amazing things. Our trance experiences are but semi-waking dreams, dealing with memory of past ages.

"Now we may understand why Cronus could not peer into the future. Memory is not of the future, it is of the past."

"My God! Grub, I can now grasp the horrors of the crime against nature, committed by the ecclesiasts in the suppression of gnosticism, and the plunging of humanity in ignorance. This permanently destroyed the intent of nature to people this earth with a perfect race," and the Doctor leaned wearily back in his chair.

"That is true, Doctor," replied Grub. "The lesion cannot be mended. Every cell in the human body is essential to its integrity. If we suppress most of them for the benefit of the few, it ceases to normally function. The same holds good in the greater body of mankind at large. That is why the priesthood is no nearer to the original goal today, than the average man."

"I see! I see! All mankind is in a state of semi-imbecility. Men do not consciously understand the difference between good and evil in the universal sense. They believe all good and evil has reference to antagonisms between each other. All the criminal laws that may be passed in a thousand years cannot change the situation. Each new criminal law but



increases this antagonism on the part of the units of the same body.

"When the ecclesiasts conceived the idea of crushing greater humanity into a plastic mass, to destroy unit influence, it destroyed the purposes of nature, for all intercourse of living nature is from unit to unit.

"Even the beastly body of the priest betrays his selfish motives, by his sleek, fat person, lolling in ease and comfort at the expense of the struggling masses. But let us stop now, Grub. This lesson is worthy of deep thought," and the Doctor arose.

Grub handed him a slip of paper: "In the last two years, fourteen states have spent seventy millions for the housing of their insane. In many states the increase has been so great they cannot be cared for out of public treasuries."

## CHAPTER XXI

"Grub, your stuff yesterday set my blood boiling, but out of it came some calm thought, and my mind especially reverted to your startling proposition that you had established the physiological positions of the God, Christ and holy-ghost principles in man. That is of tremendous help to us in our further research. I am going to try to identify the actual tissues involved," and the Doctor spread open his books.

"The holy-ghost has long ago been identified as the breath, or the respiratory power of the breathing animals.

"Now, the very fact that we can demonstrate that respiration is controlled by the tenth pair of nerves, called the *pneumogastric nerves, or vagi*, reveals the part of the brain in which the godly seat is located. Moreover, the name reveals the path by which the principle, named the Christ, reaches both respiration and digestion. This Christ principle thus represents the sending to the earth, as represented by the abdomen, God's only begotten son. We have previously followed the course of this principle through the process of digestion and assimilation. We at once recognize that this is the process by which the digested products of the stomach receive the element which converts them into living cells.

"How simple this is. The life in the cell is the Christ principle. Christ declares:

" 'I am the way, the life. No man cometh unto the father, but by me' (John 14:6).

"The cell, with the life, is the Christ principle clothed in a material body, and is now the son of man, born of water. Later it will partake of the holy-ghost, the fruits of respiration, and will be 'born of the spirit' (Jno. 3:6).

" 'Your life is hid with Christ in God.'

" 'When Christ, *who is your life*, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory' (Col. 3:3, 4).

" 'That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the spirit is spirit' (John 3:6).

"You may now see to what extent the ecclesiasts plagiarized and personified the gnostic knowledge of the human body.

"There was, absolutely, no other source from which they could have confiscated this knowledge. But to continue my lesson.

"The *pneumogastric nerve* runs farther through the body than any other cranial nerve, giving out branches to the pharynx, the gullet, stomach, larynx, windpipe, lungs and heart, all absolutely essential to maintain life in the body.

"Boy! You have made a tremendous discovery. Do you know that twelve pairs of nerves leave the skull by apertures in its base, and are known as the cranial nerves? This is the basic of the mystic twelve running through the Bible—especially the twelve apostles, meaning *sent forth*.

"The first pair are the nerves of smell.

"The second pair are the optic nerves.

"The third pair operate the eye-ball and eye-lids.

"The fourth pair pass to the mouth, base of brain and the eye-balls.

"The fifth pair resemble the spinal nerves, having two roots, and supply branches to many parts and membranes of the face, the nose and upper teeth.

"The sixth pair also contribute to the eye-ball.

"The seventh pair are distributed to the muscles of face and scalp.

"The eighth pair (the auditory nerves) are close to the facial nerves. They are the nerves of hearing and are distributed entirely to the internal ear.

"The ninth pair are distributed to the mucous membrane of the pharynx, the back part of the tongue, and the middle ear.

"The tenth pair—the *pneumogastric*.

"Now we have something spooky:

"As we have previously seen, it provides life itself to the respiratory process, to the digestive process, and to the dis-

tribution of nourishing elements to all parts of the body through the control of the circulation.

"When God made his bargain with *Jacob*, meaning usurpation, or to supplant, Jacob agreed to pay to God a tribute of ten per cent (Gen. 28).

" 'And concerning the tithing of the herd, or of the flock, the *tenth* shall be holy unto the Lord' (Lev. 27:32).

" 'And, behold, I have given the children of Levi (the tax gatherer) all the *tenth* in Israel, for their service to the tabernacle of the congregation' (Num. 18:21).

" *Levi* means the priesthood.

" *Congregation* means the tissues to be nourished.

" *Tabernacle* means the human body, and skin.

" 'A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the Lord; even to his *tenth* generation' (Deut. 23:2).

"A number of bastards are found in the genealogy of both Matthew 1 and Luke 3. Moreover, the 'immaculate conception' casts no credit upon ecclesiastical ideas of decency. Science refutes it.

" 'And he will take the *tenth* of your seeds and of your vineyards, and give to his officers and to his servants' (1 Sam. 8:15).

"Old Sam told it right that time. The people asked for a king, and the Lord told Samuel to warn them of what would follow.

"This all has reference to the earthy man, but it reveals a secret theory that *one-tenth* of the products of digestion is the 'first fruits' which go towards nourishing the brain and nervous system. These cranial nerves are mostly distributed to the head.

"The eleventh pair of cranial nerves are named the *spinal accessory nerves*. It separates into two parts, one part joining the pneumogastric.

"The twelfth pair are distributed mainly to the muscles of the tongue and the hyoid bone.

"Grub, this is the ecclesiastical symbol of the 'kingdom of God.'

“‘For, behold, the kingdom of God is within you’ (Luke 17:21).

“The name apostle means one sent forth. Literally, one sent forth to preach.

“Christ appointed twelve apostles. Therefore the twelve pairs of cranial nerves must mean the twelve sons of Israel, as well as the twelve apostles.

“Let us examine the twelve sons of Israel, to ascertain their functions, in the establishing of the church of Christ.

“*Jacob* means usurpation by trickery.

“*Rebekah* means snare, trickery, trap.

“These beget the twelve sons of Israel.

“*Reuben*—vision.

“*Simeon*—hearing.

“*Levi*—smell.

“*Judah*—taste.

“*Issachar*—breathing.

“*Zebulun*—nourishing.

“*Dan*—discretion.

“*Joseph*—increase.

“*Banjamin*—protection.

“*Naphtali*—consultation.

“*Gad*—preparation.

“*Asher*—gratification.

“We quickly recognize that these approximate the instincts and senses aroused in the centres of sensation in the human body, by the twelve pairs of sensory nerves.

“This is why the Bible credits God with possessing and exercising the external sense organs.

“‘God *saw* that the wickedness of man was great’ (Gen. 6:5).

“‘God *heard* their groanings’ (Ex. 2:24).

“‘God *smelled* a sweet savour of cooking flesh’ (Gen. 8:21).

“This is the exercise of human senses.

“Let us see to what extent Christ adjusts his twelve apostles to human attributes.

"The names of the twelve are (Matt. 10:2):

"*Simon* (same as Simeon)—hearing, obedience, who is called.

"*Peter* (Simon-Peter as one)—hardness of heart, a rock.

"*Andrew* (brother to Peter)—a strong, stout man.

"*James* (same as Jacob)—supplanter, son of *Zebedee*, portion.

"*John* (brother of the usurper, James)—giving gifts.

"*Philip*—warlike.

"*Bartholomew*—a son who suspends the power of the people.

"*Thomas*—sound, abyss.

"*Matthew*—reward, gifts (Levi the tax gatherer) (Mark 2:14).

"*James* (Jacob) — usurper, son of Alphaeus, changing, learned.

"*Lebbaeus*—brave, strong heart, surname Thaddaeus, wise.

"*Simon* (the Canaanite)—merchandizing, trading.

"*Judas*—praise. *Iscaiot*—restitution, man of murder.

"These are the alleged twelve apostles, sent forth by Jesus Christ, with this subtle injunction:

"'Be thou as wise as serpents and harmless as doves' (Matt. 10:16).

"Jesus admitted he chose the devil as one of his disciples (Jno. 6:76).

"Israel is mental. The apostles are physical.

"A man's character may be measured by the company he keeps.

"Why, Doctor, these are not men, they are but the required qualifications of the priesthood."

"Exactly so, Grub. There is not one single authentic evidence, outside the Bible, that one of them ever existed in fact," replied the Doctor.

"This suggests a close scrutiny of this christian character named Jesus Christ.

"The first thing to manifest itself is, that by no stretch of the imagination can he be connected with the pretended

genealogies named in Matthew 1:1 and Luke 3, composed of some of the most criminal characters ever mentioned in print; bastards, adulterers, murderers, thieves, robbers, liars and fakirs.

"These so-called genealogies are merely intended to portray human frailties.

"Even the Bible repudiates them, and warns against their fabulous character.

"'Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies' (1 Tim. 1:4).

"The absurd and suggestive birth of Jesus casts a sinister light upon the truthfulness of christianity.

"The only excuse given for the fabulous story is:

"'Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophets, saying,

"'Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, being interpreted is, God with us' (Matt. 1:22, 23).

"Now add to this the fact that the name Jesus is but the Greek form of Joshua, a Jew savior, and one must be a fool to believe such rot.

"Many times it is admitted that these pretended freaks are but a falsehood to enforce the fulfilment of fake prophecy.

"The prophecy regarding this miraculous birth is:

"'Behold a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel' (Isa. 7:14).

"We may understand the purpose of this absurd prophecy by a reference to the code.

"*Isaiah* of the old testament is *Esaías* of the new testament, and both names mean 'salvation of the Lord.'

"Salvation means redemption, rescue, ransom.

"Now, Grub, this is a pretty story:

"This 'virgin Mary' story is as old as civilization.

"The goddess of wisdom, of the Egyptians, said:

"'I am that which is, has been, and shall be, and no man has lifted my veil.'

"The prophet whom it is so important to vindicate is *Isa-iah*.

"*Is* means light. *A* means the primal cause, *iah* is *jah*, meaning self-existence. *Is-ra-el* is: *Is*, the light of *ra*, the sun, is *el*, the first cause.

"The Hebrews express *Isis* as *Jesse*, and *Isaiah* prophesied that, out of the root of Jesse (*Isis*—wisdom) would arise this fabulous being.

"The very fact that it turns out to be Jesus Christ, who declares himself to be 'the light of the world' and the 'wisdom of God,' proves, conclusively, that it was essential to the christian scheme to establish, as a self-sustaining thing, the system which it named Israel, and the source of all light and wisdom. *Is* in Israel is identical with *Isis*, the Egyptian goddess of light; light meaning revealed wisdom, knowledge.

"It was John who prepared the way for the introduction of Jesus, and John means liberal gifts to God.

"This gives us a clue to another important fact, which bears out the statement that it was three hundred years after Christ that the gospels of the new testament were made known. In the year A. D. 321, Emperor Canstantine issued a decree permitting the christians to build churches and accept gifts and donations, which previously was not permitted. The most important book in the Bible, in as far as the United States is concerned, Revelation, was unknown till 1672."

"Wait a moment, Doctor, I think I can throw some light upon the origin of that redemption idea, proving that it was originally the intention of the church to levy a pole-tax on the people to maintain the church. Ah, here it is:

"'Every man shall give a ransom for his soul unto the Lord' (Ex. 30:12).

"'The rich shall not give more and the poor shall not give less than half a sheckel as an offering to the Lord' (Ex. 30:15).

"The soul is the living body.



"The invention of purgatory goes this one better, because it levies a tax on the dead body, notwithstanding:

"'God is not the God of the dead but of the living' (Matt. 22:32).

"You see, in the christian dispensation John is merely 'getting back' to the old practice in a disguised form, upon the 'restoration' of this system of premeditated graft, the introduction of Jesus Christ depended. What good would be in the peddling of wisdom if the church was starving? The old form of taxation could not be restored, hence John means free gifts to God. Levi was the tax collector, but this could not be enforced, hence Levi became *Matthew*, gifts to God.

"These gifts take the following forms:

"Gen. 34:12 as a recompense.

"Exodus 30:12 as a ransom.

"Deut. 16:19 as a bribe.

"Daniel 5:17 as a reward.

"Matt. 2:11, wise men gave gifts of gold.

"Matt 5:23, free will offerings.

"In our time direct and indirect taxation in a myriad of forms, by both church and state, are devouring us. Absurd extravagances are termed civic necessities, with thousands pleading for soup and bread."

"Yes, acquisition, by fair means or foul, is the main-spring of national life. Taxation is a well organized extortion, not to meet public necessities, but to provide for and support political emergencies," agreed the Doctor.

"I have often wondered, Grub, if there could not be devised some scheme which would abolish political parties, and conduct the government in a manner to remove official patronage, favoritism, and graft. Bribery with political office is becoming a legitimate evil under our present system. There is no way of repaying the tremendous sums spent upon candidates for high office, but through the appointive power, and favoring legislation—the people must pay.

"This has built up a public service, and multiplied offices four times greater than they normally should be."

“Yes, and we have at no time found the christian schemers engaged in anything more important than accumulating, by devious coercive methods, the wealth created by the people. In two thousand years, not one important factor in the civilizing and edification of the masses, may be accredited to the church. On the contrary, the most authentic history we have, reveals, as a fact, that the church has given its influence to the destruction of men, both by wars and by murderous crusades against innocent peace-abiding countries. Untold millions have been openly destroyed by the church-inspired inquisitions. And now we find the churches, with equal frankness, advocating the smothering of the masses in a blanket of drastic and irritating criminal laws, while the statistical truth may not be concealed or refuted, crime has increased a thousand fold during the christian period.

“‘For the law worketh wrath; for where no law is there is no transgression’ (Rom. 4:15)” and Grub viciously closed his Bible.

“You handed me a slap, at the end of our sitting yesterday, referring to the horrible increase in insanity. I will hand you one now revealing one of the causes.

“In 1930 a billion and a half dollars was collected in taxes for the single purpose of building roads. The same amount was levied for the same purpose in 1931. Yet the constant cry goes out that millions of people are clamoring for bread. Does this not prove that government officials are insane?

## CHAPTER XXII

"Let us snap out of our critical mood, and attempt to find some advantage in the gnostic trinity so greedily plagiarized by the ecclesiasts," said the Doctor.

"I do not see how it is possible to convert the subject to our theme without reference to the bible," replied Grub.

"For instance, the characters of the christian trinity are but the personified symbols of physical processes. The character Jesus is born in Bethlehem. *Bethlehem* means the house of bread and war. This has reference to the digestive process in the stomach, in the preparation of *bread*, which means *food*, for distribution and nourishment of the body. The digestive process may well be likened to a state of war, in its whirling, battling labors, and its elimination of nonessential elements.

"Herod is king. The name means heroic, in the code, and has reference to the glowing skin, symbolizing worldly splendor.

"The Lord warned *Joseph*, increasing numbers, in a dream, to carry Jesus into *Egypt*, meaning oppression and misery.

"Now, Doctor, you can surely recognize the abdomen as Egypt, by the old fashioned belly-ache after eating green apples.

"It was out of the intestines we saw the *lymph* flowing, laden with the living *leucocytes* to be carried into the plasma of the blood.

"We previously found that *lymph* means water, and water means multitudes. This again reminds us that Jesus symbolizes the increased multitudes.

"*Joseph*, increased numbers, had carried Jesus, with his mother Mary, into Egypt. *Mary* means rebellion.

"Thus did oppression and misery arouse rebellion.

"It is *God*, nervous impulse, which calls Jesus out of Egypt.

“‘Out of Egypt have I called my son’ (Matt. 2:15).

“The killing of the children in Bethlehem, by Herod, was the elimination of the waste excrements of digestion. The fact that Jesus was of ‘immaculate conception’ proves that he was not a product of reproduction, but of direct creation out of the raw materials of the earth.

“The process which we are following through digestion and circulation, is the beginning of the manifestation of God in the flesh through the Jesus principle.

“We previously found that Jesus did not receive the holy-ghost, which is nervous force, until the lymph had deposited its multitudes of living cells into the blood to receive the benefit of respiration—breath.

“Here is an astonishing thing, proving that the writers of this Bible stuff were past-masters in the gnostic physiology. Instead of the products of the lymphatics going directly to the tissues, they must pass through the circulation of the blood. This is why Jesus is always so closely allied with blood.

“‘And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood; and his name is called the word of God’ (Rev. 19:13).

“Joseph was instructed by God to take the child and go into the land of Israel, which is the invisible nervous system of the head, face and external sense organs—the church of Christ, but hearing that *Archelaus, the prince of the people*, had succeeded his father, Herod, meaning the glory of the skin, worldly splendor, they turned aside into parts of *Galilee*, meaning a *rolling wheel*, revolution. And he came and dwelt in a city called *Nazareth*—means separated.

“Doctor, this is so simple it makes one laugh. It is simply depositing the white lymph corpuscles into the circulating blood, mingling them with the red corpuscles, the *rolling wheels*.

“It is at this point the living corpuscles partake of the products of respiration, and are filled with the holy-ghost.

“‘And they were all filled with the holy-ghost, and began to speak with other tongues as the spirit gave them utterance’ (Acts 2:4).

"The holy-ghost is the breath.

"Jesus is the word, speech.

"Jesus received the holy-ghost, respiration, the power of making vocal sounds, and especially the power of thought—the unspoken word.

"Now what do you suppose is given as a reason of all this?

"'That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets' (Matt. 2:23).

"'And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a branch shall grow out of his roots' (Isa. 11:1).

"*Jesse* is the father of *David*, carnal love.

"*Jesse* is the Hebrew form of *Isis*, the Egyptian goddess of light.

"*Rod* means authority.

"*Branch* means Jesus Christ.

"Jesus declares, 'I am the light of the world' (Jno. 8:12).

"'I will raise up David a righteous *branch*, and a king shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth' (Jer. 23:5).

"Matt. 1:1 declares that David, carnal love, is the father of Jesus Christ.

"'Upon one stone shall be seven eyes' (Zech. 3:9).

"The head has two eyes, two ears, two nostrils and the mouth.

"These are the 'seven eyes.'

"'Christ is the head of the church' (Col. 1:18).

"'A living stone, disallowed of men but chosen of God' (1 Peter 2:4).

"Israel is the church of Christ. *Is* = the light of the *ra* = the sun, is the *el* = first cause.

"Thus the church of Christ poses as the light of the sun, revealing all things.

"This is purely sun-worship personified in earthy men calling themselves priests, servants of Jesus Christ—light, enlightenment. *Light* means joy, prosperity, knowledge.

"Do you now grasp why the ecclesiasts suppressed gnosti-

cism and confiscated its wisdom? This was the beginning of monopoly.

"There is no element of basic religion in the system; it is purely a business proposition. It attempts to monopolize the blessings of nature and sell them to mankind for carnal things—the products of human toil. Its God is a normal, visible thing, the sun. Its Christ is the light thereof. Its holy-ghost is the vitalized atmosphere, breathed by all respiratory animals. There you are!" and Grub leaned back to see the effect his hot talk had upon the Doctor.

"Why, Grub! This robs us of our inspiration. This is commonplace physiology, and astronomy, clothed in a fancy dress, and dignified by these bunk names. We know all this," cried the Doctor.

"Of course, but we did not know that the ecclesiasts had, long ago, hoarded this up, as the gnostic wisdom, to spring upon ignorant humanity as inspired of their fabulous God in heaven, after they had seized control of the world.

"Now we may know and understand why the catholic church attempts to keep the Bible out of our common schools, and why they are so determined to take over absolute control of the school system of the nation, and why they are so opposed to scientific research, and belittle reason which exposes their absurdities. We may safely conclude that the so-called fundamentalists are part and parcel of this underground system—a Jesuit system, determined to seize control of our schools to fulfill the original ecclesiastic purpose.

"Only recently these usurpers had the brazen affrontery to seize and burn in the public squares of our southern cities the standard books of our public schools. But recently they have boasted control of our legislatures of forty-three states. And yet, the contemptible, cowardly officials neither arrested nor punished them, nor permitted the citizens to organize as a vigilance committee to resent these treasonable acts.

"In view of their own past examples, and the principles of liberty and justice involved, the perpetrators of this crime should have been seized and burned upon the same fires."

"Ha! ha! Grub," laughed the Doctor. "Why do you take this serious attitude, knowing this devilish power now practically controls this conglomerate nation, through well-established connivance with political and commercial organizations? It now has an unshakable defense against resentment and opposition," and the Doctor waited for Grub to answer.

"I have changed my opinion on that point," replied Grub. "There is a difference between organizing an ignorant militant mob, by filling it with superstitious fear, and inspiring the thinking, reasoning, educated classes.

"Upon learning that they have been woefully deceived and cheated, to promote a heartless hypocrisy, seeking only power, wealth and self-glorification, the *colleges* and *universities*, not already owned and controlled by this jesuitic power, will bring upon it a campaign of derision and ridicule which will send it slinking into oblivion.

"It was done in France and England; why not here? Every nation in Europe repeatedly expelled jesuitry. Why should this nation mother it? Are we better, or worse, in our morals, than Europe?" And Grub looked appealingly at the Doctor.

"Why, Grub, you are raving," said the Doctor. "Don't you know that every ecclesiastic element, established in this country, is armed to the teeth? Why is the church training its younger generation in athletics as never before?

"Why are classes of young catholic women being trained in the expert use of fire-arms? It is in anticipation of the very thing you have just suggested. I have watched bodies of uniformed young catholic youths openly training in the streets in Washington, with complete military outfits.

"These things are being done openly as safer than in secrecy. Patriotism? Bah! Yes, patriotism for the catholic church. I will wager a goodly sum that, were a raid made upon the catholic institutions in the United States, a more complete soldierly outfit would be uncovered than may be found in the standing army. The United States would better scrutinize closely the personnel of their state militia.

"Do you believe the church seeks to control the schools because they want to educate the masses which they already have under control, and at their mercy, through the national blood—round silver dollars—the money circulation of the nation? They don't care a tinker's blank whether the people can read or write. Did they not hold the whole of mankind in bondage of imbecilic ignorance for a thousand years? Not even princes could read or write. What do you see to justify a belief that they would change a policy which has established and sustained them for two thousand years?

"Ignorance in the masses is as essential to the integrity of the church organization, today, as it ever was. Ignorance does not necessarily mean a blithering fool; to the church it means the absence of all thought which might vision and understand the underlying church policies and purposes.

"The sole duty of the visible church is to keep the mob duly hypnotized into superstitious fear. Ignorance is absolutely essential to superstitious fear.

"Nevertheless, Grub, you are close to the only thing which can undermine this great foe of decent human existence. The church reduced the mob to a plastic mass, to break up the unit system of individual and independent thought, which begets reason, especially that independent reason which is essential to national integrity.

"I am convinced that, originally, the priesthood believed it could develop a unit contact with the universal mentation to enable them to read the minds of men by a process of telepathy. Failing in this, they destroyed individual, unit thought. They fear individual, independent thought today, more than ever before. It is a notorious fact that an over-developed athlete is almost weak minded, as compared with men normally developed, mentally and physically."

"Gee! You're right, Doctor. I had not analyzed the actual situation to that extent. But what are we to do? Shall we confess defeat, and sit idly by and see humanity pass into a condition worse than the Christian hell, which is the grave?

"'The dead know not anything' (Ecc. 9:5)."



"While you have your Bible open, look at Prov. 21:16 and you will see the premeditation of the ecclesiastic campaign of ignorance.

" 'The man who wandereth out of the way of understanding shall remain in the congregation of the dead.'

"That gives the status of the ignorant masses," said the Doctor.

"You amuse me, Grub, in your helplessness. Don't you see we have aroused in ourselves the identical disease which will, in due time, inoculate all mankind, if we spread it cautiously and set up the process of transmitting it from one human unit to another. That is nature's way, the way of mental telepathy. One man will transmit the word to another until the disease will permeate the whole body, and remain invisible.

"This is why nature endowed humanity with secret thought, which neither the church nor the law can suppress.

"Teach the people to think and give them something personal to think about.

"It is secret thought and reason which will organize the masses.

"It is fear which prevents their organizing into a physical army.

"No man can control another's secret thoughts, or direct his private meditations.

"It isn't armed forces we need; it is courageous, thinking men, not bound by commercial, political or church influences. It is independent thinkers."

"I see! I see!" exclaimed Grub. "But do you suppose these organized forces will permit us to openly make this revelation as a text for national thought?"

"Not if they can prevent it. They will suppress it if possible. They may burn you and me at the stake for bootlegging this forbidden stuff, but that very act would be their end. The masses, in the United States, make heroes of those who can stir up the great thrill, and start the big parade. As in the days in Greece, heroes here are made gods, whether

they be prize fighters, baseball idols, or movie stars. The people will fight for visible, living gods before they will for invisible gods.

"The ecclesiastical god has long ago lost his prestige. That is why the church is so strong on Jesus Christ—as God on earth.

"The pope at Rome is brazenly named 'God on earth,' and he is butting in hard just now.

"It is political power, and armed authority, which inspire fear, and control the people today.

"If we publish our discoveries they will quietly find their way into the secret places in the libraries, as did the book to which you referred, 'The Resurrection,' or perhaps into the library furnace. Practically every library in this country is secretly censored. As long as the masses do not become inoculated with a desire to exercise the primitive instinct to think, they can secretly control the limited few who might get the disease."

"But there is another element, the newspapers," suggested Grub.

"O, yes, but long ago old Tom Wolsey, cardinal, straightened that out, with his celebrated warning:

"'If the church does not suppress the newspaper, the newspaper will suppress the church.' You do not see any strenuous activities on the part of the newspapers to even criticise obvious defaults in the church. The spirit which 'criticises' the newly published books for the newspapers is the same identical spirit which censors new books going into the libraries."

"Wait a moment, Doctor. You are becoming as radical as I am," said Grub. "We have become so engrossed in our Biblical criticisms, we are drifting away from our main theme. That is, we are not attempting to solve the problem of our natural, personal contact with the universal mind. It is with a shock I realize a possibility of mentally transmitting to all humanity truths which have been suppressed for all the centuries. You mentioned telepathy. It is practically accepted

that, by some mysterious mental power, probably akin to magnetism in its character, thought may be transmitted from one mind to another. This, I hold, is but a remnant of the original intent of nature to develop in mankind a thought in common."

"I thought you would awaken and return to our original subject," smilingly said the Doctor.

"Well, this has greatly worried me," replied Grub. "Hypnotism is a scientific fact. Why has it been so fully suppressed? Undoubtedly for the same reason that magnetism was suppressed. Somebody was afraid of their mysteries. I am convinced that if one can suggest, by hypnotism, that another unconsciously do an act, or pass into a somnolent state, the same power may sit in a courtroom and equally control prosecutor, judge and jury. That is the identical influence that enthralls the congregation, listening in awe to the pictures of heaven and hell-fire, word-painted by the preacher.

"The catholics practice silence; the protestants indulge in hilarity, shouting and rolling upon the floor.

"But, Doctor, the one central idea is: can a telepathic or hypnotic power be cultivated to a degree to paralyze or kill?"

"Why not?" asked the Doctor, and he arose and passed into the laboratory.

## CHAPTER XXIII

"Well, Doctor, I trust you have recovered from the shocks of our last seance," said Grub.

"Never felt better," replied the Doctor.

"I find that our intention to rest up a bit on our Biblical stuff is not practical," said Grub.

"What have you found now?" asked the Doctor.

"I have found evidence that, when Jesus Christ was crucified he was dead, and that was the end of him. The doctrine of the bodily resurrection was absolutely necessary to save the christian scheme, notwithstanding the system itself disputes it. Now listen to this," and Grub opened his Bible.

"Christ declares the is the 'son of man' (Matt. 8:20).

"We are told in Psalms 146:3, 4:

"'Put not your faith in the son of man, in whom there is no help.

"'His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth; in that very day his thoughts perish.'

"This is most important, Doctor. It offers two essential suggestions. The first coincides with our conclusion that there is no individuality after death. All embodied consciousness ceases with the death of the body. When respiration ceases the body dies.

"The other suggestion demonstrates that the Christ character, or rather, Jesus, merely symbolizes the whole body of mankind, subject to the same fate.

"Again they corroborate this:

"For that which befalleth the sons of men befalleth beasts; even one thing befalleth them; as the one dieth, so dieth the other; yea they have all one breath, so that man hath no pre-eminence above a beast.

"'All go unto one place, all are of the dust, and all turn to dust again.

"'Who knoweth the spirit of man that goeth upward; and

the spirit of the beast that goeth downward to the earth?' (Ecc. 3).

"This very materially aids us in elimination.

"We may check off the Jesus Christ character.

"We may check off the spirit of man at death.

"We may check off the fabulous resurrection of the body.

"We may check off a personal God.

"We may check off both heaven and hell."

"Uh, huh. That confines our work to material, living bodies. I agree to that," said the Doctor.

Continuing, Grub said:

"We may eliminate all thought of a religious character, and continue to examine for evidences which corroborate our logical deductions, the Bible, which we recognize as concealed gnosticism.

"It reflects no credit upon the christian scheme that the Bible contains much wisdom. It is the best evidence in all the world of wilful confiscation by a designing priesthood.

"Let us see what the church attempts to teach to humanity pertaining to the spirit:

"They distinguish between the spirit and the soul. We find a most suggestive reference to the soul which intimates that soul and spirit are practically one.

"'Fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell' (Matt. 10:28).

"The code idea of the soul based upon the above quotation is most interesting:

"'That rational, spiritual and immortal substance in man, which is the origin of our thoughts, desires, and reasonings, and bears some resemblance of its divine maker.'

"Gen. 12:5 defines the soul as the whole person, 'both soul and body.'

"Psalms 33:19: The 'life of man.'

"Gen. 1:24 makes the soul the spirit of the brute.

"Lev. 17:10, 11 definitely refer to man as the soul, and that the life of the flesh is in the blood.

“‘It is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul’ (Lev. 17:11).

“‘No soul of you shall eat blood’ (Lev. 17:12).

“In Hebrew, soul is *naphish*, meaning pleasure, he that refreshes himself, he that respire. In the *syriac* it means to multiply.

“Therefore it is the living individual who perpetuates the race, and takes pleasure therein, and in any other physical act which gives pleasure.

“This gives us the seat of life in the blood, and the seat of physical pleasure in the tissues—under nervous control.

“The first Adam, which we found was the earth and its vegetation, was also a ‘living soul’—of the earth earthy.

“The second Adam was made a quickening spirit—the Lord from heaven—the respiratory animals.

“There is no great mystery here; the soul applies to all living matter upon this earth; the spirit applies to the red-blooded, respiratory life.

“The title of Lord is applied to man as the master over the other animals (Gen. 1:28).

“The word Lord means the loaf-warden—dispenser of loaves.

“As applied to man proper, the living physical body is the soul.

“The internal mentation, which we call our subjective self, is the spiritual man.

“Mentation is the essence, controlling and binding body, soul and spirit together.

“‘God is a spirit’ (John 4:24). Spirit deified.

“‘It is the spirit that quickeneth’ (Jno. 6:63). Life.

“The significance of this expression is, to put life into matter, which engenders voluntary motion, and involves respiration.

“‘Those who walk after the spirit’ (Rom. 8:1).

“There are many misguiding sayings of this kind intended to convey the idea that the guiding spirit is an external thing,

independent of the body, whereas the true significance is an intelligence within us guiding our actions.

"This is what we call our subjective mind—the life processes within us, guided by an intelligent understanding. This is the nearest approach to a personal God man will ever know.

"The kingdom of God cometh not by observation.

"The kingdom of God is within you' (Luke 17:20, 21).

"This distinctly has reference to the subjective mind.

"It is the fear that the subjective mentation of mankind may be *awakened* to the truth, that causes christianity to point to God and heaven as external things, which may only be attained through the influence of the church, and through the support of a ravenous, idle, nonproductive priesthood, always yelling for themselves:

"If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we reap your carnal things' (1 Cor. 9:11).

"But in Romans they preach:

"To be carnal minded is death.'

"Because the carnal mind is enmity against God. For it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

"So they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

"If Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin.

"If ye mortify the deeds of the body ye shall live' (Romans 8).

"Can you beat that for logic?

"Nature provides us with bodies through which to express the creative will, and we must abuse and mortify physical expression. The purpose of this is clear. It is to destroy nature-worship which is expressed by the gnostic system, to dignify fabulous, external doctrines, purloined from other fake religions, or conjured out of the minds of a vicious priesthood.

"Let us examine their idea of a guiding spirit.

"They distinguish between body, soul and spirit.

"The body without the spirit is dead' (James 2:26).

"This clearly defines the spirit as the life of the body.

"It is the life of the body which animates it. The first

cause of its every act. Therefore, to mortify the acts of the body, is to oppose the spirit—the God principle.

“‘I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved unto the coming of Christ’ (1 Thess. 5:23).

“This prayer distinguishes between spirit, soul and body. Moreover, it calls upon an external God and Christ.

“‘Christ is our life’ (Col. 3:4).

“‘God is a spirit’ (John 4:24).

“‘It is the spirit that quickeneth’ (John 6:63).

“‘The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life’ (John 6:63).

“Do you grasp the audacity of all this jargon, Doctor? They are determined to introduce and preach an external being, which is none other than the priest, to dictate to the God and Christ which they admit are physical functions in our living bodies.

“Do you now understand why Christ represents power and authority? The whole christian process is to seize the governing control over the whole world.

“The word Christ is not a proper name at all. It means initiation into high office.

“Now we may accuse and convict, out of their own mouths, the blatant ecclesiasts, who constructed the so-called christian Bible from the gnostic wisdom and philosophy. They have perpetrated wilful fraud to deceive mankind.

“In compiling the Bible from the original infallible manuscripts, it was essential to make many changes. It is these radical changes which convict them. They sought to establish a personal, human God to represent the fake christian God on earth, with all power, and all authority.

“The pope of Rome is called ‘God on earth.’

“In the early chapters of Genesis, especially, are found many deliberate alternations.

“The word ‘and’ is substituted for ‘so.’

“‘Adam’ for ‘the Adam,’ meaning earthy.

“‘God’ for ‘the Gods.’



"In the creation, where 'man' appears, it should be 'the Adam.'

"These radical changes alter the whole sense of the text.

"Here is the evidence that the early makers of the Bible attempted to adjust it to the gnostic philosophy.

" 'And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the earth before it grew' (Gen. 2:5).

"Thus a picture of each created thing in form preceded its actual material formation.

"This is purely gnostic, and makes of man a creative God, in the sense that he pre-visions those things which he desires to make.

"Throughout the Bible many important alterations, substitutions and interpolations are found.

"Therefore, along with God, Christ, and others, we may check off Christianity as a thing of vivid imagination."

"I'm satisfied with that conclusion," said the Doctor. "Yet, we may continue to use these names, God, Christ and man, merely to identify certain tissues, organs, and their functions, and to aid us to separate the grain from the Biblical chaff."

"Yes, we may do that without getting the knees of our trousers soiled by kneeling to them, which performance is but symbolic of the time when men were but lower animals, groveling in the earth from which they came. It is a form of 'mortifying the body'," replied Grub.

"But, Doctor, to interrupt the main subject for a moment. I have had in mind to ask you how you happened to name me Grub."

"Ha! ha!" laughed the Doctor, and he led Grub to a window, saying, "Do you see that depression over there in the corner of the garden? Well, beneath its surface is a body of clean, white sand, four feet deep. When you were a baby, barely large enough to toddle, I made that spot for your play ground. I gave you a little hoe, and a little shovel, and threw you into the hole and told you to dig your way out. One day I could not see you. Going to the hole I found you

up to your neck in sand, and still going. I had to dig you out myself. I named you a grub-worm, and the name Grub has been your nickname since."

They laughed heartily over this, but the Doctor suddenly became serious, saying, "It is quite a coincidence that you ask me this question at this particular time, because, I had in mind a discussion of your suggestion of the larval character of your primary creative waves, and this reveals a most important truth. We are rapidly approaching a telepathic correspondence which enables us to read each the other's mind."

"Well," replied Grub, "we have already checked off telepathy as a scientific truth."

"Let's have your drawing showing your waves as larvae," said the Doctor. Grub spread the illustration before the Doctor:



The Doctor pondered the waves for some time; then he said, impressively:

"Grub, you surely have revealed the source of life, as applying to living matter upon the planet. It is questionable if the ecclesiasts interpreted this with understanding.

"This planet, and its living products, reveal the creative functions of these waves: a solid and fluid body, surrounded by an atmosphere of nitrogen and oxygen.

"The other elements found in the atmosphere are incidental to the process of accumulation and growth. The whole of the living production of this earth are reflective. We must not be too hasty in eliminating vegetation from this theory of planetary image and likeness. I will explain this later.

"Each wave, or series of waves, attracted or reflected to this planet, brings its quota of intelligent energy, and our atmosphere is the reservoir from which we absorb our planetary maintenance.

"I do not originate the theory, but it is very plausible, that the blue of the sky above us consists wholly of ozone, as a store of oxygen for this planet. Ozone is a molecule of three atoms of oxygen. If this is oxygen which has not completed its creative function, we know that it still retains, in a potential state, the carbon and hydrogen waves. Therefore ozone carries these elements as a potential store. This is our direct source of life. The creation of physical, material forms is a reflected planetary influence, which suggests forms which are images of its own parts.

"Now I will explain what I meant when I said we should not eliminate the vegetation. There are many very instructive images revealed in the vegetation, proving planetary reflections.

"Look out there in the garden, Grub. You see the *dandelion*, a splendid example. The yellow blossom images the sun; the globular mass of seed pods reveal the reflective moon, white, and when this is cast off, there remains a dark, globular image, the earth which produced it.

"Nothing could better illustrate the reflective nature of the moon.

"'The woman is of the man' (1 Cor. 11:12).

"This figures the taking of the rib from the side of sleeping Adam—taking the crescent moon from the side of this planet.

"The scattering of the seeds, as we have seen in the dandelion, figures the potential nature of the moon, receiving reflections by the light of the other radiating bodies, and reflecting these to the atmosphere of the earth.

"This one planet is a revelation, imaging the sun, the moon and the earth, and their separate function. It even goes farther. Every living animal, in some degree, or suggestion, at the time of its birth, has attracted to it an umbilical cord, which it drops upon becoming independent of the body giving it birth and freedom. As long as the seed-pod of the dandelion is intact it is bound to the earth by a flesh colored stem,

but upon the pod being released, this stem no longer serves a purpose.

"Grub, this illustration very closely allies vegetation with the physical animals, and we quickly grasp the difference. The vegetation is an external and physical reflection of planetary influences, whereas the organic animal is an internal image of planetary life. This you have previously illustrated.

"It is no foolish idea that our moon affects our vegetation, suggesting times for planting, etc., etc. It is from the planetary light that vegetation receives its inspiration.

"It is by respiration that the animals receive their mentation.

"My brief experiments with ozone, corroborates its blue color. There is no doubt about our blue sky being due to the presence of ozone. Moreover, ozone, in its normal state, irritates the respiratory organs, demonstrating that it must pass through some atmospheric digestive process before it is suitable for assimilation. The atmosphere contains the quantity of oxygen essential to sustain animal life. The large quantity of nitrogen in our atmosphere stands as a barrier between the earth and the ozone body. External to that, doubtless, is a similar body of nitrogen.

"The free nitrogen and oxygen in our atmosphere are, undoubtedly, controlled by the influence of the sun and the moon. The sun radiates into our atmosphere the oxygen spirals, and the moon the nitrogen rings. By respiration we draw these into our system there to complete their functions.

"See how simple this process is, Grub.

"The sun is the source of our life.

"The moon is the source of our mentation.

"The earth nourishes our physical body.

"This is why our atmosphere is a mechanical mixture instead of a chemical compound. In the atmosphere the ends of the spiral and the ring are not exposed in a manner for direct union, hence they cannot chemically unite until they enter the processes in the body.

"The spiral begets in the earth the habit of axial motion,

and the circle the habit of orbital motion, in order to keep this condition alive, and bind each in its position in a progressive system. It is a magnetic state.

"We may now approximate the source of our universal wisdom. Axial motion breaks up direct contact by alternating light and darkness.

"Orbital motion brings us in wide contact with multitudes of other living worlds, which radiate their light to our moon to be reflected to the atmosphere of this planet for the benefit of its living beings.

"The oxygen spirals give us vital energy, and the nitrogen rings impregnate our atmosphere with planetary wisdom. We absorb these as our physical and mental nourishment along with the material food supplied by the earth direct.

"The products of our digestive processes are cast out as mental and physical excrements, which are greedily devoured by the vegetation, both as its bread and breath.

"Why, Doctor, I am amazed at your wonderful knowledge of this living exchange," exclaimed Grub.

"Well, don't you see it yet?" asked the Doctor.

"See what?" said Grub.

"The mental food of both, the living creatures of this earth, and the earth itself, for that matter, are your larva-laden waves," and the Doctor leaned back in his chair to enjoy Grub's excitement; then he continued:

"Don't you see the spirals are the living germs of your oxygen waves, and the ring—the potential serpent with his tail in his mouth—is the germ of your nitrogen wave in its potential attitude.

"Now you can understand why all the ancient philosophies pictured wisdom by the serpent in a circle, with his tail in his mouth."

"Well! Well! Well!" exclaimed Grub. "Sure I see. The earth being magnetic, is an absorbent body, and all its products are absorbents."

"Yes, and the moon is a reflective body, and the source of our planetary wisdom. It reflects planetary suggestions

which we absorb and develop into living pictures," said the Doctor.

"I can understand, now, why the ecclesiasts adopted the moon to symbolize the church," said Grub

"Yes, and that is why it is so determined to usurp the schools, to enable it to pose as the medium of inspired learning, and reflected education," the Doctor replied.

"Nature is our educator and guide, had humanity been left alone to absorb all that nature intended we should absorb, to fulfill our mission on earth. But don't lose sight of the fact that the sun produces our physical bodies and the moon endows them with mentation.

"That will be our next lesson."

## CHAPTER XXIV

"Good morning, Doctor," was Grub's greeting.

"Top o' th' day tu yu," gaily responded the Doctor.

"I want to be a little rude, and beat you to the morning's subject, Doctor," said Grub. "I want to suggest that we have a review of our four elements, *nitrogen*, *oxygen*, *carbon* and *hydrogen*, if that is agreeable to you."

"Say! Boy! What are you trying to pull on me? How did you know I burned the midnight oil, last night, delving into this identical subject? Look here." And the Doctor placed upon the table a sheaf of notes, jotted down, in his research on the four essential elements.

"What shall I do, laugh or weep? Now can you beat that?" exclaimed Grub. "No, Doctor, I did not know you had the same work in hand. I tell you, we are getting closer to the secret every day, and while we are on this point, I want to call your attention to something both interesting and puzzling.

"For a long time I have observed a phenomenon worth investigating. It intimates an invisible world about us seeking recognition through physical beings. If invisible until it impinges upon some of our external sense organs, it, necessarily, has no manifesting body of its own, but it assumes shape, or recognizable form, by contact with the living body with an analytical sense and knowledge to recognize it.

"It seems to corroborate the theory Cronus suggested, when Sir Walter Raleigh manifested himself to us. The psychic form can only manifest itself through the living being, and the form thus manifested is but a mental picture, aroused in memory.

"Let me now explain the phenomenon. At first it seems very simple and unimportant.

"I am thinking or writing, and you, or someone else, may ask a question, or speak a word, or name an object,

and I am almost frightened to discover that I had just written the word or name, and previous to the external reminder. Or, frequently I have spoken a name of a person or object and, lo, it is visible before me in actual form, intimating a medium ever ready to attract one's attention to the object of his thoughts.

"Of course, I recognize this as a kind of telepathic force, but how can such a sense be present in inanimate things? Does the mind reach out into space and anticipate the object before it is actually visible; or does the object reside in an atmosphere of its own, and when our minds penetrate this subtle aura the thing itself is made visible to us?"

"This is a tremendously important subject, Grub," softly said the Doctor. "Your very mention of it stirs the imagination to an active state. Why, the mere writing or speaking of a word actually gives it a permanent mental form, and these forms seek to attach themselves to embodied mentation, in order that they may be put in circulation. Why, these are living things, Grub. Prentiss Mulford sure did know what he was saying when he said 'thoughts are things.' Every idea, expressed in a spoken word, becomes a living germ of unembodied thought in the great universal pabulum."

"Why, Doctor, that makes our atmosphere an invisible spirit world," exclaimed Grub.

"Boy! We have broken through the wall. Why haven't we grasped this before?" said the Doctor. "Just as sure as we live, the fact that both our minds were bent on reviewing our primary waves has revealed this, and the waves will demonstrate this. I will now proceed with my lecture with this as an inspiration.

"We have trailed our four primary waves through four spheres: the vibratory, gaseous, solid and fluid. Physical manifestation is reactive, beginning in the waters and creeping onto the land and up into the air.

"There you are. We have peopled water, earth and air. What about the vibratory world? It would be imbecilic to say the vibratory sphere is not saturated with life."



"Huh! It looks as though we have convinced ourselves there is a spirit world, whether we want to believe it or not," said Grub.

"Grub, this is a serious phase of our studies," softly replied the Doctor. "There can be no doubt about the four primary elements, as demonstrated by our waves, being the four states of being, and this makes nitrogenous life the fourth estate, and this is life. As you have previously said, the sense of being is a fourth dimension of material bodies."

"Well, what is the final object or purpose of our being physical bodies here on earth?" asked Grub.

"It is to make spiritual forms which are stored in the vibratory world. We see physical evidences all about us that nature follows one trend.

"Why do the birds build nests? To perpetuate their kind.

"Why do men build houses? To protect their human units.

"Why do men house their cattle?

"Why does every living thing, in some manner, surround its kind with protection?" and the Doctor looked questioningly at Grub.

"Why do we write books?

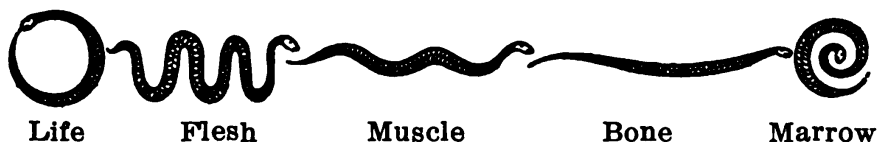
"To have a store of mental food.

"And all of this is clearly revealed by your series of waves in eternal pursuit of each other as food. The heads of your primary waves are attached to the tails of the preceding wave attempting to devour it. The reverse is true in the secondary series, which draws upon mother earth for sustenance, each receding wave drawing upon the excrements of the preceding for nourishment.

"The litter of pigs drawing upon the mother. The calf drawing upon the cow, and all nature drawing upon the parent body.

"And, now, the final touch reveals why the universal wisdom is not drawn upon at will. It is the serpent in a circle with its tail in its mouth, with no exposure for attraction. This is a reserve attitude.

"We may know, by this, why the breath symbolizes the holy-ghost. We inhale these nitrogenous rings from our atmosphere, which at once declares the purpose of the stored, universal wisdom. It is the spiritual food to develop the mind in organic bodies, as the oxygen spirals of our atmosphere are inhaled to develop the physical body. Our waves reveal all this:



"These are the physical servants of the universal being.

"They, alone, can procure food for the nourishment of our soul and body.

"It is these atmospheric rings which nourish our mentation, and give us life."

"Then, after all, we cannot go beyond our own atmosphere for our universal wisdom," said Grub.

"In a sense that is true. We are endowed with special organs to absorb the mental and physical nourishment to which we are entitled from nature, but the senses of vision and hearing have a wider range, partaking especially of planetary knowledge. This earth is a magnetized body, therefore, it does not reflect, it absorbs. Therefore it is a focus for external forces. These forces reach the atmosphere of the earth by these waves, which are absorbed by our external atmosphere consisting of two photospheres, the outer body of nitrogenous atoms, and the inner one of ozone. This planet, and its moon, hold in a state of balance our direct atmosphere which we breathe. In this manner we have an indirect contact with both planetary and universal influences.

"We will examine our elements in the order of their position in your system of primary waves, which, in their origin, may be named positive, universal waves.


"I first want to comment on the fact, that, the alleged discovery of scientific truths largely fall within the period

subsequent to the eighteenth century. This intimates one of two things, either scientific research and philosophy threw off the despotic yoke of ecclesiasticism, or else the church was attempting to unload gnosticism, as its own product, through its jesuit schools, for the papacy did not surrender its usurped 'temporal power' over the nations of Europe until the middle of the nineteenth century (1870).

"We have already found that, a knowledge which seemed to involve, at least, a well-defined idea of the principles of later scientific discoveries is concealed in the Bible, evidencing that gnosticism knew all these things before christianity was born. The ecclesiasts personified the natural elements and forces and concealed them in code until such time as it felt secure in its political powers.

"From all that we have discovered, christianity is but a horse-blanket, thrown over gnosticism, and that the usurpative ecclesia is the whole show, feasting off the struggling producing masses which they have mastered. The church following is but a militant guard, standing between them and government interference, especially strong in the United States because of the voting franchise.

"Let us keep this in mind as we awaken the gnostic wisdom, in a close scrutiny of the four primary elements.

"I understand your theory, that the electron,  is a globule containing the original forces which manifest in the primary, creative waves.

"We may truly name this the original egg of nature, of which we have many material imitations. For instances: the mass of human brain-cells; the lung-structures; the masses of fishes' eggs, and frogs' eggs; clusters of grapes, with their creeping, serpent-like vines, and endless others.

"Of necessity, we shall use the accepted technical names and terms given to the elements by the modern science.

"*Nitrogen*, symbol N, atomic weight 14, which signifies 14 times the atomic weight of hydrogen 1, which is the measurer of atomic weights of elements.

"Keep in mind the previous conclusions regarding the symbolizing of these elements. You will recall that the moon symbolizes woman, meaning the church. Mary figures the church and Mary is derived from *mer*, meaning the sea.

"A significant thing is, in the code, the *moon* means the *measurer*.

"We see the necessity for God's having made two females in making Adam. The first female is the water attached to the earth; the second was the woman—rib, taken out of the side of Adam—the moon cast off the side of the planet. The crescent moon suggested the rib story.

"The moon is appropriated as the church.

"Originally, nitrogen was named *azote*, which comes near to tangling up the code in the Bible.

"One of Christ's ancestors was *Azor*, meaning help or assistance. The church assists the ecclesia. *Azotus* is the Greek form of Ashdod. *Azotus* means a stronghold.

"The church is the stronghold of ecclesiasticism, which makes the change from Ashdod to Azotus, a serious reflection, for *Ashdod* means pillage, theft, confiscation.

"The wise element back of the church did not relish the name *Azote* given to nitrogen by the alleged French discoverer, *Lavoisier*, because Azote means no-life—because nitrogen is incapable of sustaining life in physical bodies, in fact, is opposed to living material bodies, setting up decomposition in them.

"Lavoisier was educated at the *College of Mazarin*, founded by one Jules Mazarin (Mazarini) a jesuit, from the Jesuit College at Rome.

"For no particular reason, Lavoisier, the father and founder of modern chemistry, was guillotined, at Paris, and Azote became nitrogen, because the original name was dangerous to the '*Mazarin Bible*.'

"See how remarkably these facts all fit together. Keep these apparently trivial things in mind, Grub. Remember, we have previously decided that the seat of organic life is not in the brain, the brain being the seat of reflected menta-

tion. It is the cold, lifeless moon which symbolizes the brain, while the sun symbolizes the heart.

"Nitrogen is colorless, therefore it cannot appeal to the external sense of vision.

"It is tasteless, therefore it cannot appeal to the sense of appetite, or a desire for material food.

"It is odorless, therefore, it cannot awaken the external sense of smell.

"It is not inflammable, therefore it cannot support combustion, or generate heat.

"It is lighter than air, therefore, its normal position, en masse, is above the normal atmosphere, although the atmosphere consists of almost four-fifths of nitrogen, the other fifth being oxygen.

"But, I do not believe the atmospheric nitrogen is identical with the original universal element, but is a reflected form—a potential ring.

"Now we may know why nitrogen is not a sustainer of physical life. It not only does not sustain life, but it is an essential agent of decay and decomposition of bodies. While it is an essential element of nourishment of brain, and nervous tissues, it is a ravenous decomposer of animal and vegetable tissues.

"This vindicates our previous deductions, Grub. The seat of organic life is not in the medullary matter of the brain and nerves; that is the only logical seat of the God principle, therefore, God is more concerned with physical death than he is with organic life, and the church so teaches."

"Wait a moment, Doctor," and Grub opened his Bible.

"We will find the Bible concealing this very wisdom.

"In condemning wisdom, as symbolized by the serpent, God said:

"'And I will put enmity between thee and the woman' (Gen. 3:15).

Woman is the church. Wisdom is the serpent.

"'Know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity

with God. Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God' (James 4:4).

"The spirit of gnostic wisdom was given a material body, the Bible, then forbidden to the world at large.

"Now, Doctor, this actually corroborates this chemical revelation, proving it was no product of modern chemical research. It was secretly revealed by the gnostic wisdom, and here is the final evidence:

"The serpent is a symbol of the gnostic wisdom.

"The woman means the city or body politic.

"The antichristian civil governments (Rev. 17:3).

"Weakling governors (Isa. 3:12).

"'And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased' (Luke 23:12).

"This is the same treatment given the serpent.

"'The carnal mind is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be' (Romans 8:7).

"The word 'indeed' here reveals the superficial vocabulary of a writer trying to impress his stuff.

"'To be carnal minded is death' (Rom. 8:6).

"Nevertheless, they reach out for the carnal stuff with their spiritual stuff.

"God does not create or foster the physical manifestations; he rather antagonizes and destroys them, because, with the liberty of voluntary motion in a material body, a lesion occurs between the spiritual and physical process.

"'God is a spirit' (John 4:24).

"Man is material.

"'God is not a man, neither the son of man' (Num. 23:19).

"'Moses was a man' (Ex. 11:3).

"'Christ was a man' (1 Tim. 2:5). 'And the son of man' (Matt. 8:20).

"Moses and Christ died, but God lived.

"When man assumes a state of independence, God is

angered and regrets having brought him into being, and he destroys him.

"It repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth.

"And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth' (Gen. 6:6, 7).

"Let us examine this cunning intrigue for its secret significance.

"Moses symbolizes the civil law; this must die.

"Christ means authority; civil authority must be crucified. But, the resurrection of Christ, and his ascension into heaven symbolizes the destruction of civil governments, and the permanent usurpation of all authority by the ecclesia.

"This reveals that man did antagonize the godly will, and that God destroyed him for his independent attitude, by withdrawing his divine favor.

"*Heaven* means the ecclesiastical government.

"*Face* means divine favours of God, also his wrath.

"Which appeals to you strongest, the godly or the human aspect of this playful romance?

"God, in his vicious anger kills man, who interferes with his plans, for good and all, but he resurrects his Christ man to live forever.

"'Fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell' (Matt. 10:28). *Hell* means the grave.

"Do you see the power of fear in ruling the people? This ecclesiastic thing has been so successful in its rule of fear, civil governments are hopelessly committed to the same policy.

"Respect for the law is not solicited; fear for the law is ruthlessly enforced.

"And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage' (Heb. 2:15).

"This makes all imperial governments a form of enmity towards the unorganized masses. Mankind is but a plaything for self-constituted human gods, whose only power is fear, force of arms, and cultivated ignorance.

"Civilization, under these abnormal conditions, is a tremendous failure.

"Why!!! In two thousand years since the introduction of christianity, should humanity be writhing under the tortures of ignorance, crime, imbecility and poverty?

"I challenge civil governments, and the church, to answer this vital question. To place the blame upon the people is to condemn national life."

"Well, well, Grub, open a night school. I want to attend it and learn to so quickly grasp these truths," said the Doctor.

"I will prove it to you now," said Grub.

"God is God until he reaches the spiral, that is the earth. The earth, we know, is a magnetic body, and rejects the primary nitrogen wave which withdraws to the highest position or photosphere surrounding the earth. This is revealed in the human body. 'God manifests in the flesh,' the outer tissues of the structure. All of the primary elements manifest in material bodies—oxygen in the muscles, carbon in the bones, hydrogen in the marrow. 'To be carnal is enmity against God.'

"Gemeny Christimus! Grub. Stop! You have solved the problem. I grasp the truth," excitedly exclaimed the Doctor.

"You will remember I expressed a belief that the nitrogen of our atmosphere differed from the original, direct, primary wave.

"The foxy ecclesiasts make the moon the female in our immediate system, and adopt her to symbolize the church. We found the reactive nitrogen wave assumed a circle, or ring, in our atmosphere, and that is the symbol of eternal life and wisdom. Great gumbo! Do you see what that means?

" 'My father and I are one.'

"This nitrogen wave reflected from the moon yields up the potential oxygen and itself assumes the form of a circle or ring, and thus God sends his only begotten sun to the earth—the spiral.

"This accounts for there being four of these nitrogen



atoms in our atmosphere to one of oxygen—the earth absorbs the oxygen in that proportion.”

“Ha! Wait a moment, Doctor. I can put the finishing touch on this,” said Grub.

“The moon symbolizes the church on earth. The church is *Mary*, the mother of Jesus. The process which you have just described is the origin of the fabulous story of *Mary* carrying Jesus into *Egypt*, oppression and misery.

“The moon is a cold, reflective body. It rejects the direct ray from the sun, the God-father, and this is why *Mary* means rebellion.

“This romantic revelation is personified on earth by the ecclesiasts, and they have actually attempted to mould humanity into a living reproduction of planetary processes. This is the figurative manifestation of God in the flesh—in living matter. Moreover, God sends his only begotten son to earth to be crucified. This is symbolized by the muscular tissues of the body hanging upon the human tree, the *skeleton*. He is hanged at Mount Calvary. *Calvary* means the human skull.

“Now, Doctor, we know christianity is an absolute fake, conceived in the imaginative minds of evil men. It is a deliberate assault upon nature and mankind.

“The atmosphere symbolizes the church and state, united in one cause, but independent of each other, the church predominating in proportion to the nitrogen and oxygen in our atmosphere.

“God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night.

“The sun is the *ecclesia*, which word means government.

“The moon is the church, an assembly, organization.

“The sun rules the day and visible knowledge.

“The moon rules the night and controls ignorance.

“Day means, a prophetic year, a gospel period.

“Night means adversity, affliction, ignorance.

“Gospel means a good story.

“The nitrogen atom in our atmosphere is a reflected atom, being cast back by the moon.

"The oxygen atom is a radiated atom, being radiated from the sun.

"Both these atoms, in the primitive projection, were waves.

"We are thus reminded that reaction is equal to action.

"The sun represents fire.

"The moon represents moisture and cold.

"These combine and become visible in our atmosphere as clouds and lightning.

"There shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and upon the earth; distress of nations with perplexity.

"Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth; for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

"And then shall they see the son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory' (Luke 21).

"Now if these dreadful things are not due to the influence of the sun and moon, why are they mentioned.

"Why do they name Christ the 'son of man,' in this particular instance?

"*Heaven* means ecclesiastical government.

"*Cloud* means affliction.

"*Ezekiel* is named the 'son of man' eighty-nine times.

"*Ezekiel* means the strength of God.

:"*Christ* is named the 'son of man' eighty times.

"*Christ* means official authority of God.

"Now which is coming in this particular cloud, Ezekiel or Christ?

"Both, for they are one and the same.

"*Authority*, Ezekiel, represents the civil authority, and Christ, the authority of the ecclesia.

"Hence Ezekiel does not participate in the christian dispensation.

"In what form do they manifest?

"*Lightning* symbolizes fire and vengeance.

"*Fire* means judgments.

"They cannot manifest in fire, for:

"'God is a consuming fire' (Heb. 12:29).

"Jesus declared:

" 'I judge no man' (John 8:15).

" 'My kingdom is not of this world' (John 18:36).

" 'I came not to judge the world' (John 12:42).

"Ezekiel was not a judge, he was a prophet.

"Therefore they must manifest in judgments and executions, and this means man-made civil laws. There is nothing divine or godly in the system. Nevertheless, the church has instilled into civil government that mawkish sentiment which deprives all law of decent respect, and fills mankind with fear and resentment. This is the spirit which inspires rebellion, and involves mankind in oppression, misery and tribulations.

"*Christianity is based on rebellion.*

"*Mary, the mother of Jesus Christ, means rebellion.*

"Jesus takes up his residence in *Galilee*, meaning revolution.

"Christ secretly preached to his disciples:

" 'I am come to send fire on the earth.

" 'Suppose ye I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you nay; but rather division.

" 'The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother' (Luke 12).

"Right in the beginning of the new testament, we are warned by Jesus Christ:

" 'Think not that I am come to send peace on earth; I came not to send peace, but a sword.

" 'A man's foes shall be they of his own household' (Matt. 10:34, 35, 36).

"Thus christianity declared its purpose to ruthlessly violate the most sacred human ties, to establish its own vicious authority, based upon the three cardinal sins preached by itself—envy, hatred and malice.

"But there is an element here which we must not overlook. Christ is allegedly proclaiming these vicious purposes in the new testament.

"These so-called gospels had no existence at the time it is alleged he was preaching. They did not exist until three hundred years afterward. Hence, in the same verse we find Christ speaking as of the present and of the past—'come,' 'came' (Matt. 10:34).

"The ecclesiasts confiscated and concealed the traditional gnostic wisdom as a store of scientific knowledge to be measured out by the church as a mediator, and cast into the atmosphere of mankind, as the moon supplies the nitrogenous rings to our earthy atmosphere.

"Christ in this system symbolizes the oxygen atom, hence :

"'Christ is our life' (Col. 3:4).

"'Christ is the power of God and the wisdom of God' (1 Cor. 1:24).

"'For there is one God and one mediator between God and man, the man Christ Jesus' (1 Tim. 2:5).

"The elimination of Jesus Christ explodes the whole christian scheme.

"This definitely exposes the whole ecclesiastical scheme as the secreted wisdom of the gnostics, deliberately stolen from humanity at large by evil-minded men, having no higher motive but their own devilish schemes for plunder and self-aggrandizement. The condition of the world, today, clearly reveals this."

"Well, Grub," said the Doctor, "we surely have identified the only elements, in the knowledge of man, which may be named the christian God and Christ, and these are nitrogen and oxygen. This renders it easy to recognize man and woman as the earth and the sea, the manifested carbon and hydrogen. It is wholly a chemical proposition.

"Mary, the mother of Jesus, is derived from *mer*, the sea.

"No wonder John hesitated to baptize Jesus with water, but John's baptism meant submersion in the waters, and waters mean a multitude of people. Christ was submerged in humanity.

"Christ also was baptized with the holy-ghost, to breathe,

which carried nitrogen and oxygen into the lungs. This is the nature of the christian 'inspiration,' and gives us a clue to follow. We may trace the path back to the universal mind, or pabulum.

"But, we must rest, Grub. We wandered far away from our original intent to review our four elements, but they were very much involved nevertheless. We will continue the same theme as our lecture for tomorrow."

## CHAPTER XXV

"I will attempt to extend our examination of our four primary elements, Grub, taking up the theme where we left it yesterday," said the Doctor.

"Let us scrutinize oxygen as the symbol of Christ, which will not be difficult. We know that oxygen is born out of the nitrogen wave in the original positive series. We have identified the God principle as nitrogen. This clears up the idea of Christ being the '*son of God*.' Moreover, this explains why Jesus insisted upon John's baptizing him with water. By this process Jesus is made also the '*son of man*.'

"See how simple this is. We saw the original set of waves culminate in the hydrogen spiral—earth and water. Organic life pushed out a secondary, and reactive, set of waves, in which the oxygen wave appears, born out of the carbon wave. This illustrated how Christ is also the '*son of man*.' As a positive element he is the '*son of God*'; as a negative element he is the '*son of man*.' Is this clear?"

"I say so. Let's diagram it," said Grub.



"This explains why the original man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man (1 Cor. 11:8)."

"Yes, we've found it," exclaimed the Doctor.

"We may locate the original seat of potential wisdom in the electron, a globule, and the manifestation of wisdom into knowledge, in the circle at the end of the reactive set of waves, the nitrogenous ring in our atmosphere. God is made to say:

"'I am the beginning and the end' (Rev. 1:8).

"You may also grasp why the woman, Mary, symbolizes the church—the moon, the mediator, measurer. Moreover,

for God to manifest in the flesh he must pass through all these creative phases, which makes man in his image and likeness. This is not a favor, it is a Godly necessity.

“‘God is all and in all’ (1 Cor. 15:28).

“Hydrogen is logically the measurer. It is the standard measurer of the atomic weights of the other elements.

“Nitrogen 14, oxygen 16, carbon 12, hydrogen 1.

“Now, Grub, I have never seen in chemistry any semblance of your wave theory, but we frequently find in the Bible sly references to it as *worms* and *serpents*. Therefore, I am convinced there is connivance between the ecclesiasts and the scientists of the eighteenth century. These so-called philosophers were all jesuits. They were strong at that time, and they could not study the sciences except in catholic-jesuit institutions. You remember Duncker was a jesuit, noted as a mathematician. Yet his most important work was coining history for the church.

“I call your attention, also, to the fact that all your primary waves merge into the hydrogen spiral. Do you see why it was selected to symbolize the universal church?—all in one. Catholic means all, universal, focused in one body. It culminates in the orbital ring representing the moon principle.

“It is a suggestive thing that all the big colleges of learning in the United States are called universities.

“Oxygen, like nitrogen, does not appeal to vision, taste or smell, but it is especially essential to respiration, and physical life. Nitrogen is equally essential to death and disintegration of bodies.

“That God had the power to kill all is declared in Gen. 6:7.

“It was the oxygen which God breathed into carbon which ‘made man a living soul.’

“Oxygen is necessary to germination.

“It is upon its dual nature that the death and resurrection of Christ is predicated. The living fruit of every system is the symbol of Christ. The fruit is raised up, ripens,

falls to the earth, its body decays, and its spirit rises up as a new living tree. This is the true resurrection from the dead.

"We are not surprised to learn that oxygen is the most magnetic of all the gases, and the most abundant of all substances, constituting one-third of the solid parts of the earth, nine-tenths of the water and about one-fifth of the atmosphere. Hence the earth is Christ's realm, and the atmosphere is God's.

"It is apparent that nitrogen and oxygen are not endowed with the sense of selectivity of material things, but are arbitrary creative forces. This accounts for their eternal exploitation of arbitrary authority. It is true that oxygen is essential to respiratory life. Hence Oxygen is selected to represent the abstract Christ character, and it is amazingly true that it fulfills the idea, although we know the fabulous character of all the Bible names.

"Some one was familiar with something resembling this wave theory, to have so accurately adjusted their symbolisms to these atomic triads, dyads, etc., etc.

"We may now approach the carbon wave with awe, knowing that he is carrying both God and Christ, as well as affectionately embracing woman.

"'Christ is our life' (Col. 3:4).

"'God manifests in the flesh' (1 Tim. 3:16).

"The natural condition of carbon is solid, hence it is selected to symbolize the earth, man, and the bones. Its purest form is the diamond, the hardest of all substances.

"'The chief corner stone, elect, precious' (1 Peter 2:6).

"Who selected the name Adam—ant for this element, if they had no knowledge of the association?

"Why should Adam resemble a diamond any more than eve, if they did not know he symbolized the solid earth?

"As a block of ice, Eve could make earthy old Adam look like a lump of coal. Although Eve means life, she is symbolized by the water.

"Carbon is a non-conductor of electricity. It is the most



characteristic constituent of all vegetable and animal matters. Therefore, if it is Adam in man, it is also Adam in all other living matter, hence the first Adam was the earth and the vegetation attached to it. Naturally, the second Adam is the respiratory animals, drawing the oxygen from heaven which makes the physical body the temple of the holy-ghost (1 Cor. 6:19).

“‘Jesus is the Lord but by the holy-ghost’ (1 Cor. 12:3).

“The holy-ghost is the breath.

“Only vanity makes men christs above other animal kinds. This explains why ecclesiasticism condemns evolution.

“The spiritual life is the trend of life running through the whole creative system, symbolized by the heart and circulation (Col. 3:4).

“The ecclesiasts confess there is no spiritual difference between man and beast. Both are alike in this sense (Ecc. 3).

“But the positive evidence that they have a knowledge of the consecutive trend and development of the life waves, is in the declaration that:

“‘God is the head of Christ, Christ is the head of man, and man is the head of woman’ (1 Cor. 11:3).



“The peculiar arrangement of the verse, as in the Bible, is a deliberate attempt to conceal the continuity of waves.

“The eternal life is the universal mentation, permeating all, and is symbolized by the brain and nervous system.

“Hydrogen is the female principle.

“That it is a principle without the sense of selectivity is shown by the fact that it does not form direct contact with vision, taste or smell.

“It is inflammable when heated in air, or in oxygen, burning into hydrogen-oxide, which is water ( $\text{OH}_2$ ). Hydrogen is the lightest of all gases, hence it is the measurer of atomic

weights of elements. Therefore the following is a premeditated divergence from nature.

“‘Suffer not a woman to teach’ (1 Tim. 2:12).

“The purpose and intent of this is clear. *Hydrogen*, which is the symbol of woman, or the female principle, means water (Hydor).

“In the ecclesiastical code water means the multitude of people. The people must not be permitted to teach their own children.

“These readjustments of natural elements to meet the symbolized ecclesiastic system are pitifully simple.

“‘Woman shall not usurp authority over men’ (1 Tim. 2:12).

“‘For Adam was first formed, then Eve’ (1 Tim. 2:13).

“In the primary series of waves, the carbon wave precedes the hydrogen spiral. Thus Adam precedes Eve. This definitely reveals that this primary series of waves are the subject of these regulations. Christ, to be the son of Mary, and the ‘son of man,’ is born out of woman.

“This clearly distinguishes between the two series of waves. We may safely name the primitive as spiritual, and the secondary as material.

“It is a piece of damned impudence for the priesthood to set itself up as the representative of the spiritual, and class all other men as ‘of the earth earthy,’ simply by coding the hydrogen spiral as symbolizing women, Mary, and the church.

“*Mary* is *mer*, meaning the sea.

“*Ad* is the male principle, *am* is the female deity.

“The physical structures explain this. It was the basis of the ancient Phallic-worship, freely plagiarized by the christian system.

“Moreover, this reveals the antiquity of the traditional gnosticism. It was to confiscate gnosticism that christianity was established.

“Lavosier was unfortunate in selecting names for the elements which he allegedly discovered. He named nitrogen

*azote*, meaning no life, which was an insult to ecclesiasticism, because it had selected nitrogen to represent the invisible God.

"He named his other important discovery hydrogen, from *hydor*, meaning water. Now, hydrogen is not water, but it is essential to produce water. Hence, technically, woman is born before man in the secondary or material series of waves.

"Lavoisier was ruthlessly guillotined for his errors—not in naming his discoveries, but for exposing the ecclesia, as a fraud and false-pretense.

"Now, Grub, we have identified and assembled all the elements primarily involved in the ecclesiastic scheme, and our own elemental wave theory. These we must study to a finish."

"I have followed you closely, Doctor, and I have attempted to summarize these revelations into visible, tangible things which we may survey in a collective perspective, to see if there is a manifest resemblance between the bodies in apparently separated systems." And Grub spread out his notes.

"I believe we should now attempt to eliminate all this christian tommy-rot about heaven, hell, God, Christ, etc., etc. There is nothing morally instructive about it. Whereas, it attempts to lead human thought and investigation away from the most vital things in nature.

"It is only by deductive reasoning that we may go beyond our own planet to come in contact with universal and planetary wisdom. The christians are as viciously opposed to the development of *reason*, as they are to the teaching of evolution. Notwithstanding evolution is the sole foundation of their own sinister enterprise, with human ignorance as its superstructure.

"The planetary structure is our greater being, born out of eternal space. The earth, a unit in that greater being, is a collective product of this planetary system, a well-defined organ of the greater body.

"The organic life upon our planet is the image and like-

ness of our system reflected in visible and intelligible manifestations.

"Vanity has no place of superiority in the creative scheme, therefore man is not an overlord simply because he is the highest evolved creature on this earth in point of reason. Had he been permitted to develop unhindered he would have stood amazingly above his present status. But, stunted as he is, many lower animals have an instinct superior to the reasoning powers of man. For this abominable condition we may thank christianity, with its debasing sob-stuff.

"Man was designed by nature to become a synopsis of the creative scheme, and thus he was to be the revelation. An analysis of man reveals every creative act with its resultant product, and that product reveals the purpose of its creation.

"Permeating this whole system is a potential, impalpable, formless, universal substance, endowed with intelligent forces, which may be named the universal spirit. These primary forces have an inherent power to endow the potential mass with creative cells, which are the seeds for greater created beings which are cultivated for the fruits they yield.

"Every organized system in nature cultivates and protects that upon which it depends for nourishment, support, and reproduction.

"Absolute vacuum is an essential part of the system. The original electron, out of which are born the four primary elements which we have been studying, is a vacuum, surrounded by a film of prime universal substance. This at once reveals the two basic forces in nature, external pressure and internal resistance. These two primitive powers beget all other creative forces. We may at once recognize the so-called 'God and Christ as one' idea, by the release of these two forces united as positive and negative—our primary waves are positive, and our secondary waves are negative—hence, as a balanced cell, they become a magnetic molecule. This is why this earth of ours is a magnetized body.

"Motions, contacts, conflicts, desire, attraction, repulsion, all become creative forces.

"Intelligence, in living bodies, develops in proportion to the experiences of contact, and environment.

"Our own organic life upon this earth reveals a mental evolution accompanying physical progression. Voluntary motion in bodies begets the sense of selectivity, causing living bodies to select the line of least resistance to a goal.

"All of these creative experiences form an intelligent, traditional record, available to beings having the power of interpretation. Such a tradition is the basis of gnosticism.

"It is highly possible that there was an era in the life of this planet when every living creature had an instinctive understanding of all creative knowledge up to the highest point of its development.

"Tradition is the inherited wisdom.

"I am equally convinced that this natural evolution towards a universal thought in common was wilfully suppressed, that the undeveloped class might not acquire it.

"The alleged deluge in the Bible merely means the submersion of the greater humanity in ignorance and mental darkness."

"Well, Grub, that is quite an instructive lecture, and material for our future lectures," said the Doctor, and the seance was closed.

"I don't seem to find an opening to exhibit crude pictures I have automatically made which have a bearing upon our subject," said Grub.

"We shall try to find one before we are through," replied the Doctor.

## CHAPTER XXVI

Grub found the Doctor walking the library floor, with his hands behind his back, as though deeply absorbed in thought. Upon seeing Grub he turned quickly, saying:

"I'm glad you came in, Grub. I have an all-absorbing subject to discuss with you."

"I'm listening with both hands," replied Grub, and they took seats at the table.

"Well," began the Doctor, "you said something yesterday which caused me to do a lot of thinking last night. You were wondering why Cronus seemed to make it his specialty to lead us into a discussion of ecclesiasticism and civil governments. I am convinced that Cronus has not guided us to the subjects which we have had under discussion.

"We are not giving sufficient thought to the psychic character of our trance conditions at the time they occur.

"It is a species of reaction which is controlling our minds at the time, and there is a logical reason for our being guided towards those things which reveal the great errors in the development of human thought and action.

"If it is true that the ecclesiastic exploitation, and its collateral forces, are opposing the original intent of nature in the development of mankind, and leading it away from its normal course, it is logical to believe that nature, in its own defense, would pursue a course to counteract such human aberration from truth and moral rectitude.

"Nature cannot err, but the freedom, and personal liberty, with which nature has endowed mankind, can be abused, but with absolute certainty of reactive punishment. It is wholly a human problem, and humanity at large suffers the consequences of vicious defiance of natural laws. The christian schemers stress rebellion and revolution, born of oppression and irritation.

"Therefore, nature's forces are manifested in human ac-

tion and reaction. Nature depends upon the same resources for correction, as are practiced in bringing about oppressive conditions—human force; human resentment, vengeance against those who have forced mental and physical distress upon the greater body.

“Action must necessarily precede reaction, as cause precedes effect. Hence the original action must complete its course as measured by your primordial waves, before reaction can occur. Nevertheless, nature has wisely provided against eternal stress. The tendency for the straight line of carbon to assume a curvilinear course, with a tendency to drop into a conservative and recuperative spiral, is the warning that the end of coercion is near.

“Carbon symbolizes the coercive rod of authority.

“Now follow me closely. Up to the time of the ecclesiastical assault upon gnosticism, the bent of humanity was towards natural guidance, along lines which would develop and perfect the human mentation, which was the goal of evolution. Gnosticism proves this. With the interference, on the part of ecclesiasticism, and the introduction of the christian false-pretense, to lead the masses of people away from nature’s guidance, and into a wilderness of inspired evils, a reaction was set up, and the state of conservative balance into which gnosticism was guiding humanity, was submerged, with traditional wisdom, in imbecilic ignorance. And since that time humanity has been groping in darkness.

“Never before, in the history of the world, has mankind been so enmeshed in crime, insanity, poverty, and all the kindred evils accompanying these, as it now is, under the christian dispensation.

“Nature had led the world near to a state of understanding, when a herd of human beasts—living in caves to demonstrate their disapproval of general and widespread intelligence, and to perfect a system of reaction—grinned out upon humanity being led backward, as symbolized by the fabulous exodus of Israel out of Egypt and into a wilderness of sin. This was a deliberate and wilful debasement of mankind in

sin, for the purpose of commercializing crime coined by statutory laws.

"*Exodus* means the establishment of legislative powers. The same under which the present generation of humanity are rotting today.

"Grub, your automatic writings demonstrate beyond discussion, that gnosticism is a living thing. It symbolizes human thought, and deductive reasoning.

"*Gnosis* means to know, by natural instinct, those things which encourage the progress of nature towards the perfection of her creations along lines of logical thought and reason.

"The early, so-called, manastics were properly named monks, for the root word of both monk and monkey is *mon*. They chose to abandon the clean, decent environments of social progress, and crawl into vermin-infested holes in the earth which they called caves. Even Jesus was allegedly born in a cave.

"What merit is there in such vulgarities?"

"These monks knew the gnostic teachings, and they began a reactive process, which led humanity into absolute ignorance, while laying the foundation for a well defined political exploitation, under a false-pretense of religion, to enslave humanity.

"*Gnosis* means to know, knowledge.

"*Faith* means to believe, ignorance.

"It was essential to break up the tendency of human mentation toward a universal union, which would have obviated the necessity for organized human governments."

"Just a moment, Doctor," interrupted Grub. "That is a startling suggestion. Do you mean to say that the original intention of nature eliminated organized governments?"

"Undoubtedly," replied the Doctor. "I will make that clear farther along. I desire to impress now, that the original purpose of the christian organization was a dastardly conspiracy against nature and humanity.

"The word ecclesia reveals this:



"For what other purpose was this name plagiarized from the Greek?

"Ecclesia signifies a legislative body, and it carries with it that contemptuous theory that war is essential to maintain peace.

"The christian plotters chose the ancient legislative name of Athens, the ecclesia, because of its drastic character.

"Here is where we observe the law of reaction.

"It figuratively requires but the last straw to break the camel's back.

"Even the ignorant ass will lie down in the road under an excessive burden.

"And, so, humanity revolts, when church or state persecution goes beyond the limit of human endurance.

"The curse of the whole of Greece fell upon the *ecclesia* of Athens, and revolution finished the work.

"*Jesus* took refuge in Galilee—revolution.

"France broke, under the accursed union of church and state, and turned to revolution.

"Russia took the Roman catholic church by the scuff of the neck and showed it the shortest way out by revolution.

"Germany and many others have turned to revolution as a remedy for government ills.

"Spain, right now, is torn by revolution, and has practically wiped out the catholic churches, as Spanish Mexico has done.

"If the church is not involved, how does it occur that the savage mobs destroy them? Where the church is, there is revolution.

"There has never been an important war, or revolution, that the church has not been accused and found guilty of being lined up against the people.

"What should the world expect, when Jesus Christ declares:

" 'Think not that I am come to send peace on earth; I came not to send peace, but a sword' (Matt. 10:34).

"And the church declares:

" 'Wars must be' (Matt. 24:6).

"That these things are secretly for the destruction of the common, burdensome herd of people may not be disputed. The fear of revolution is the cause of wars. With every visible preparation for war, conspicuous public officials begin to talk about peace.

"And now, the crowning suggestion of official crime against this nation raises its head in our own high places, in the form of a suggestion that this government confiscate all the property of all the people, in the event of another war.

"This is exactly what the ecclesia of Athens did.

"Can you not see the bloody hand of ecclesiasticism in all this?

"In the moral downfall of a nation, the mind is first broken by constant irritation in devious forms. This nation is literally writhing in insanity, and crime, the mother of insanity.

"Why accuse the making of a multitude of criminal laws? Because:

" 'Crime is the transgression of the law' (1 John 3:4).

" 'Where no law is there is no crime' (Rom. 4:15).

"Why the yowl about the increase in crime with so many laws on the statute books they cannot be numbered?

"Practically every law passed by a legislative body is intended to suppress one criminal individual whereas it irritates and oppresses thousands of innocent ones.

"For instance, the constitution clearly permits all citizens to carry weapons for the protection of their own persons and property. Because the few may make a misuse of a weapon the whole community is disarmed, giving the criminal classes a free and safe field for operation. The victim of a burglary may be shot down by the crook, but the helpless, unarmed victim cannot defend himself or property.

"The arming of the whole public would instantly stop wholesale burglary, especially of private residences and open business places.

"But, why rave? This nation is being oggled by the whole world as the next victim of revolution.

"Crime will override the law."

The Doctor slammed his fist upon the table and again began to walk the floor.

"Well, what can be done to stop it?" asked Grub.

"Nothing," replied the Doctor.

"Unthinking ignorance has done its work."

## CHAPTER XXVII

Despite the feeling of the previous day that they were wandering away from their original theme, and the suggestion that they should take a brief rest, both Grub and the Doctor came into the library smiling.

"Ah, ha! The jelly is still on your fingers, Grub. What pantry have you pillaged?" was the Doctor's cheerful greeting.

"Well, Doctor, I see the butter of good-cheer smeared over your countenance this morning. Tell me what you have done with the bread," was Grub's smart-crack answer.

"Look here, boy; there's something spooky about this," exclaimed the Doctor.

"You use the word *bread*, and this is almost the essence of my subject this morning, which I am compelled to vent. I want to examine the nourishment of the bodily tissues, and compare it with the gnostic system, and in this process I believe I can demonstrate the origin of the fable of Jesus being born in a cave, or in a manger, in Bethlehem.

"This will end all controversy regarding the identity of the Jesus character, and, Grub, I know that you will be as much astonished as I am, that humanity has been so gullible.

"The code defines *Bethlehem* as the house of bread and war.

"*Beth* means covering, concealment.

"*Bread* means to brew, to prepare by heat and agitation, or disturbance; to roll or seethe, fermentation; to mingle or mix, to contrive, to hatch, a mixture prepared by brewing, to become a food.

"*War* means embroilment, turmoil — God's method of destruction.

"*Manger* means a feeding place for cattle, a crib or trough. In Palestine it originally was a part of the house, the manger being the trough into which the food was placed or mixed for the cattle—this part of the house being the *cave*.

"*Cave* means a dwelling or hiding place.

"*Bethlehem*, originally, was called *Ephrath*, meaning fruitful. Evidently cognate with *Euphrates*, meaning fructifying. The boundary of *Eden*, meaning pleasure.

"'Scene of David's conquests.' David means *love*. When he became enamoured of a woman he took her, even though he had to murder her husband (2 Sam. 12:9).

"Webster's definition of manger is to chew; to emulsify, to reduce to a milky fluid.

"Do you begin to recognize what I am getting at? The *chyle* of digestion, taken up by the *lymphatics*. *Lymph* means water.

"What organ in the body comes nearest to this description?

"Sure, I get you. The stomach," exclaimed Grub. "It surely resembles mixture and warfare in its spiral digestive operations."

"Now, Grub, the birth of Jesus meant hell on earth. Listen to this: the abdomen symbolizes the earth. Or, more fully, the physical body is the earth.

"Right in the beginning of the new testament, words are put into the mouth of this fictitious being, born in confusion and war, declaring his purpose to upset the world, and bring embroilment and conflict, and confusion, onto the people, by violating the most sacred human ties.

"'Think not that I am come to send peace on earth. I came not to send peace but a sword.

"'For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother.

"'And a man's foes shall be they of his own household' (Matt. 10:34, 35, 36).

"Does that sound like a 'prince of peace'?

"This symbolizes the beginning of the *digestive process* in the ecclesiastical exploitation of humanity. *Chyle* means to pour, juice, essence. Jesus is born out of water. The multitude of people.

"The embroilment of the nations of Europe in endless wars, by the Roman catholic ecclesia, is authentic history.

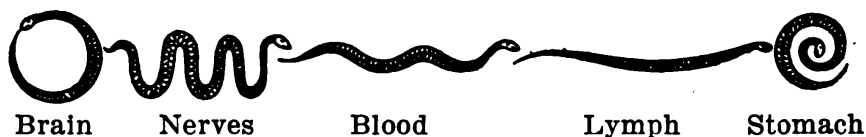
The damnable crusades, openly preached by the popes, were well defined, plundering raids. The murderous inquisition was conceived in the vatican at Rome, and executed by Catholic forces in the field, drenching Europe with the blood of fifty millions of its own people, and the contemptible, cowardly, pope-appointed sovereigns permitted and assisted this thing.

"That was the digestive process which eliminated the objectionable classes from the church field, and that was the method, until it was discovered that colonization in new countries could be made profitable. It was the 'burning of the tares' (Matt. 13:42).

"Now, hand me your sets of waves, in which you demonstrate the waves as living larvae. *Larva* means ghost.

"Yes, that's the one. I'll reveal to you the origin of the wicked christian personifications.

#### "DEGLUTITION AND DIGESTION



"These are the agents involved.

"Now, my boy, I'm going to show you that the whole story of the birth of Jesus is but a *gnostic lesson* in physiology.

"First, let us examine the word *Jesus*. *Je* is an abbreviation of Je-hovah, meaning the ever-existent one, God, life.

"'In God was life; and the life was the light of men' (Jno. 1:4).

"*Sus* is equated with the Greek *Zoo*, meaning life, and with the English word *sow*, meaning sustenance. The root word is *sos*, meaning comforter, sustainer, to draw out, or drawn out."

"Ah, I wonder if that is why the signal of distress is S. O. S.?" exclaimed Grub.

The Doctor continued:

"Therefore, *Je-sus* means the ever-existent sustainer of

life. It is equated with *Jum*, the ever-existent *sun*, or the light of the sun. Hence Jesus declares:

“‘I am the life’ (John 14:6).

“‘I am the light of the world’ (John 8:12).

“‘No one cometh unto the father but by me’ (John 14:6).

John declares that he comes to foretell the coming of Jesus. *John* means the gift of God.

“‘John was not that light, but was sent to bear witness of that light’ (John 1:8).

“*John* is Jeho-hanan, abbreviated to Jo-hanan.

“*Jeho* is Jehovah, or God.

“*Jo* is increase.

“*Hanan* means mercy, which means hire, pay, reward.

“*Joha* means given life. *Jo* = increase, *ha* = generation.

“This sufficiently identifies these personified characters. Let us now identify your larvae.

○—Potential Electron, symbolizes the brain.

“Out of this potential electron are sent the creative forces which adjust themselves to the physical agents to direct assimilation of the products of digestion—a chemical process.



“These are the elements entering into the material structures to nourish the tissues of the body.

“Carbon—John, foretells the coming of oxygen—Jesus, life and intellect.

“God cannot manifest at this time because God is cold nitrogen. God follows Christ to the earth, or rather, God assumes the form of Christ. ‘I and my father are one.’

“John is the bones animated by Jesus, the muscles, and following the oxygen wave, we find the nitrogen wave. Hence ‘God manifests in the flesh’ by following oxygen into the tissues, especially the structures of the brain and medullary matter.

"Father means the source of authority, the head.

"So important is this word 'father' it appears in the Bible about seven hundred times. The root is *pa* = to protect, *papa*, *pope*.

"The father is also the master, the Lord.

"Lord means the dispenser of bread. *Loaf-warden*.

"Which again corroborates the heavenly father as the sun, the producer.

"'In him was life; and the life was the light of men' (John 1:4).

"'The true God and eternal life' (1 John 5:20).

"Now, we are told:

"'God is light, and in him is no darkness at all' (1 Jno. 1:5).

"Christ declares:

"'I and my father are one' (Jno. 10:30).

"Now, Grub, here is my conclusion. While we recognize the earth as symbolizing the hydrogen spiral, we have not duly examined the sun as an earlier spiral body, out of which are radiated the oxygen spirals.

"Christ, as a product of the sun, the father, comes to the earth, not as the oxygen wave, but as the oxygen spiral of light, which we find in our atmosphere.

"Hence, the planetary process precedes the earth. Again let us examine your waves.



"Hence the warning that there is a higher life:

"'Fear not them that kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell' (Matt. 10:28).

"Hell means the grave.

"It is important here to identify the holy-ghost, to see what part it takes in this killing of the body.



"Gen. 25:8: 'Abraham gave up the ghost.'

"'Ishmael gave up the ghost' (Gen. 25:17).

"'Isaac gave up the ghost' (Gen. 35:29).

"'Jacob yielded up the ghost' (Gen. 49:33).

"'Jesus cried out with a loud voice and gave up the ghost' (Mark 15:37).

"Here is a lesson:

"*Ab-ra-ham*: the high hot father, heat or warmth of the sun. The father of multitudes. Abraham came out of *ur*—fire. The high-priest of fire worship ceased to function.

"*Ish-ma-el* means sterility, a sterile mother, a barren and fruitless thing, nonproductive, one of Abraham's bastards, the lowest type of people maintained by charity.

"*Is-a-ac*, first cause of primitive power. laughter, joy, prosperity, light, knowledge.

"*Jacob—Ja-cobus*—usurpation, insidious, the supplanter. As Israel, the church of Christ.

"*Jesus*—Greek form of *Joshua*, meaning increased wealth.

*Je* is an abbreviation of Jehovah; *sus*—sustenance.

"The *holy-ghost*, the *breath of life*, was withdrawn from all of these, to make way for the living personifications on earth, the church organization.

"Now you can see the secret purpose of the old testament.

"These all represent the established things which had to be secretly smothered to death, and, figuratively, their atmospheres were destroyed; their respiration was cut off; their breath ceased, and they *died*. But, their memory lives in the atmosphere of the living church.

"Now we have the evidence that the universal wisdom consists of the memory of past things, to be drawn upon by living generations on earth. Atmosphere means breath, soul.

"The joy, prosperity, knowledge and understanding which were inspiring the world, had to be destroyed to make way for ecclesiasticism.

"Do you see no premeditation in this?

"The world would better take warning.

"The old testament was but the rehearsal of the game

which was to be pulled off, which has subsequently been pursued and which is not yet complete. The end is not far distant. The final stroke will be laid down here, in the United States. Revelation was added in 1672 having especial reference to the exploitation of the United States.

"*Moses*, the law, gave up the ghost and died.

"*Mo* means water, a multitude of people and laws.

"In the United States the *holy-ghost* is being systematically smothered out of the nation under a blanket of irritating, oppressive laws.

"What evidence have we that this is a premeditated thing?

"Evidence of the creation of crime by the law:

"'Where no law is there is no transgression' (Rom. 5:15).

"'Without the law sin is dead' (Rom. 7:8).

"A dead thing is not active.

"Evidence that the laws are intended to suppress the freedom of the people, and drive them into the church for protection. The confessional must usurp the place of the law.

"'The *law* is our *schoolmaster* to bring us unto Christ, that we may be justified by faith' (Gal. 3:24).

"Evidence that the law is to die, as Moses died, to give way to church authority. Christ means official authority.

"'After faith is come we are no longer under the law' (Gen. 3:25). 'Christ is the end of the law' (Rom. 10:4).

"Evidence that the church is to assume all authority over violators of the law:

"'For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God; and if it first begin at *us* what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?' (1 Peter 4:17).

"Who are '*us*'? The priesthood.

"This is the beginning of the second inquisition, and it is in operation in the United States right now.

"In this connection we find an awkward contradiction:

"'For the father judgeth no man but hath committed all judgment unto the son' (Jno. 5:22).

"But Jesus declares:

“‘I came not to judge the world’ (John 12:47).

“And to overcome this error, the power to judge is given to the son of man, the priest (John 5:27). Nevertheless, Paul preaches:

“‘Let no man judge you in meat, or in drink, or in reference to the sabbath day’ (Col. 2:16).

“Evidence that it is a premeditated thing to legislate all humanity into a state of criminality.

“‘Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: *that every mouth* may be stopped and all the world may become guilty’ (Rom. 3:19).

“‘By the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified; for by the law is the knowledge of sin’ (Rom. 3:20).

“Evidence that these things mean the civil governments and their laws:

“‘For we wrestle—against principalities and powers of this world’ (Eph. 6:12).

“And now we come to the culmination of all this evidence that this christian pretense is but a concealing cover, hiding the *ecclesia*, which is to step into power when the church has cleared the way for *Jacob*. Usurpation by trickery, to assume control and authority.

“Jesus Christ, church authority, will resign and sit at the right hand of ecclesiasticism as the ruling power of the earth.

“*Ecclesia* means heavenly government.

“*Heaven* means ecclesiastical government.

“*Earth* means producing mankind.

“‘Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom of God, even the father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.

“‘For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.

“‘And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the *son* also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all’ (1 Cor. 15).

"The ecclesia manifests its power and authority.

"Now, prepare for the shock, Grub.

"This thing was pulled off in Europe.

"The popes of Rome held the temporal power over the nations of Europe for nearly five hundred years. The human sacrifice in the burning of the tares aggregated sixty million lives.

"We previously found that at the end of the tenth century all Europe was anticipating the literal ending of the world. It was but a figurative thing, and the priesthood knew and fostered it. It was then the end of independent sovereignty came, and papal authority seized the temporal power, holding this power over Europe till the latter part of the nineteenth century, when the Americas became the catholic Garden of Eden, and exchanged the temporal power over European nations for non-interference in North America.

"This is what we must prepare for:

" 'The field is the world.

" 'The good seeds are the children of the ecclesia.

" 'The tares are the children not of the church.

" 'The harvest is the end of the world.

" 'The reapers are the inquisitors, priests.

" 'The tares are gathered and burned in the fire.

" 'So shall it be in the end of this world.

" 'The pope shall send forth his priests to gather all that is offensive to the church.

" 'And shall cast them into a furnace of fire; there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth' (Matt. 13).

"This is no bedtime story; it is a gruesome, grinning fact, as Europe can attest.

"I can plainly discern the hand of secret, militant church forces guiding the people of the United States away from intellectual pursuits by the glamour of athletics.

"The voice of militarism is ever whispering in the ear of our youth; prepare your body for the next exciting war. International wars have superceded papal crusades, crippled

heroes have succeeded the gods — a good excuse to collect money in the name of charity.

“If one could possess a telepathic mind which could search out the intricacies of church and national intrigues, he would be shocked to learn how little of manhood is left in those who govern the people.

“Again I have permitted myself to be guided away from my lecture, so closely allied are the two subjects. We shall take the story of your larval waves up again tomorrow, Grub.”

## CHAPTER XXVIII

"Let us begin where we left off yesterday, Grub," said the Doctor, as he arranged his papers upon the table.

"The primary set of waves form but half of the creative process—the active half resting in the spiral molecule, the first living germ, life embodied,  $\text{NOCH} = 43$ . Out of this spiral comes the resurrection.

"In so far as the nourishment of the tissues of the body is concerned, this spiral is the *leucocyte*, taken up by the *lymphatics* and distributed to their proper destinations, there to undergo other transformations.

"We readily recognize the positive waves in the personified ecclesiastical characters. This is the spiritual half of the apple, and especially represents the planetary forces.

"Out of this spiral are born the other half—the secondary or reactive series of waves, which must be the reflected image and likeness of the positive set.

"At first it is not recognized how the godly may be separated from the earthy. But, see how cunning. They take advantage of the satellite moon having separated from the earth, and they personify it as the church, the measurer of spiritual light, the mediator between the planetary system and the earth, which is Adam, the earthy adamic race of men, separated from the godly priesthood. This separates the immaculate priesthood from earthy contact.

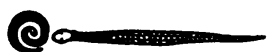
"We may readily recognize the physical personification of the moon as the reflective brain.

"It is out of the leucocyte, in the lymph, we must trail the earthy symbolisms.


"*Lymph* means clear water.


"*Leucocyte* means a hollow vessel.

"We must follow this corpuscle through the blood, the marrow of the bone, and the connective tissues:




'Male and female created he them' (Gen. 1:27).

 'Jesus, the son of man' (Matt. 8:20).

 'God is not a man nor the son of man' (Num. 23:19).

"'I and my father are one' (John 10:30). Observe, oxygen speaks.

"Jesus is the 'word' coming out of the mouth of nitrogen, God.

 'God is all and in all' (Eph. 1:23).

"It is at this point God exclaims:

"'I am the beginning and the end, the first and the last' (Rev. 22:13).

"And it is most suggestive that this passage appears at the end of the last chapter in the Bible, which was not accepted until the year 1672.

"Now we may understand why nitrogen assumes the shape of a ring in the earthy atmosphere, symbolizing universal wisdom—the serpent with his tail in his mouth. The original globule, or electron, is the womb out of which the primary positive waves are born. It contains all. Hence God declares: 'God is all and in all.'

"In this seemingly intricate system or process, the physical man procures the raw materials from external sources, and presents them to the head for censorship and selection. If accepted the creative or spiritual man, as represented by the primary set of waves, converts these materials into a vitalized pabulum. The subjective mentation directs an intelligent distribution of this pabulum for the construction and nourishment of the tissues, the last act being the manifestation of 'God in the flesh.'

"This is the revelation—the perfected man glorified.

"In the code, *flesh* means 'the body of man,' 'outward appearance.'

"It is instructive to follow the Jesus character through this process.

"Jesus, the ever existent life, is carried into Egypt, the digestive process, with its spiral operation in digesting the materials passing into the stomach for food.

"*Egypt* means oppression and misery.

"Jesus is called out of Egypt by the creative forces and temporarily resides in the lymphatic circulation. We at once recognize the first living, or embodied form of Jesus as the leucocyte.

"*Lymph* means water. Hence Jesus, as the son of man, is born out of the water.

"Jesus said: 'Verily I say unto thee, except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God' (John 3:5).

"Jesus passes out of the lymph and enters into the circulating blood, symbolizing *Galilee*, meaning wheel, *revolution*. The white leucocyte becomes the red blood corpuscle, a disc or wheel.

"'The holy-ghost was not yet given, because that Jesus was not yet glorified' (John 7:39).

"Upon coming in contact with the elements of respiration Jesus receives the holy-ghost. *Holy-ghost* means the breath.

"Now the living corpuscles are invested with the state of conscious individuality.

"Jesus, the leucocyte, or lymph corpuscle, upon entering the blood comes in contact with the *haemoglobin* of the blood plasma, which endows it with oxygen from the lungs, and converts it into the red blood corpuscle, giving it the sense of respiration. This is the end of the digestive cycle.

"Look what a cunning thing this is, Grub: respiration means expansion and contraction. This is a union of the God and Christ principles. God is potential life. Jesus is expanding life.

"It is here John exclaims:

"'This is he that came by *water and blood*, not by water only, but by *water and blood*, and it is the spirit that beareth witness, because the spirit is truth' (1 Jno. 5:6).



“‘For there are three that bear record in heaven, the father, the word, and the holy-ghost, and these three are one’ (1 John 5:7).

“This trio is *thought, speech and breath*.

“‘Who is the image of the invisible God, the first born of every creature’ (Col. 1:15).

“‘As our words are the images of our thoughts.’

“Spirit, life and breath unite as one in the blood, hence:

“‘The blood is the life of the flesh’ (Gen. 9:4).

“‘And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood; and his name is called the word of God’ (Rev. 19:13).

“Jesus now becomes the life of the muscular system and is ready for the ‘crucifixion.’

“The muscles are hanged upon a tree, the human skeleton. The system hangs from the base of the skull.

“*Golgotha* means skull.

“*Calvary* means skull.

“Of course the malefactors hanged with him went where he went, for they were his right and left arm.

“Jesus must now pass into an earthy sepulchre, to complete the story.

“The bones symbolize this tomb.

“After having made the great sacrifice to the muscles, the red-blood corpuscles are carried into the bones, from which tomb Jesus arises into the new life.

“This is the resurrection.

“The process is extremely simple.

“An examination of the large bones of the human body reveals the central medullary cavity filled with the marrow.

“In the spaces of the spongy portion of the bone surrounding the cavity is the *red*—marrow. Quite different from the yellow, fatty marrow of the central cavity.

“The compact or hard parts of the bone are filled with microscopic cavities, called *haversian canals*, which ramify all through the bones, and open upon the surface of the bone, into which flows the blood.

"The *lacunae cavities* are flat, oval receptacles, resembling two concave halves with their edges fitted together. These are filled with the exuded, red-blood fluid which has surrendered the transparent part of the read-blood corpuscle.

"These cavities are the figurative tomb of Jesus, the crucified, muscular Christ, who has surrendered his carbon body to form the hard portions of the bones, the earthy man, and his spiritual body rises up to take its place at the right hand of God in heaven, becoming the living cells in the medullary matter of the tissues of the brain and cerebro-spinal nerves.

" 'If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God' (Col. 3:1).

"The *red-marrow* of the bones reveals the earthy man clothed in the cast off bloody vestures of Christ.

"Now do you understand the similitude of Jesus sacrificing his material body and blood upon the cross for the benefit of the earthy humanity?

"As I previously said, the whole fabulous story of the life and crucifixion of Christ is a gnostic lesson in the deeper physiology.

"This passing of the purged corpuscles into the nervous structures is the second resurrection.

" 'So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption' (1 Cor. 15:42).

" 'It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body' (1 Cor. 15:44).

"The evidence that the Jesus or Christ principle is now become a symbol of authority, is seen in the fact that, after the day he was taken up, through the holy ghost, he ceased to teach his disciples and began to command them (Acts 1).

"Before I get too far away from it, I must call your attention to this: We know that the bone and marrow in our reactive wave system, symbolize man and woman. The rising out of the bone of the medullary element, to form the

tissues of the nervous system, is the symbol also of the moon having been cast off by the earth.

"Therefore, the raising up of Jesus Christ merely figures the drawing forth of the church from the common earthy mankind, to educate a favored class in the mysteries of the gnostic wisdom, with the belief that a spiritual existence after death is a cultivated thing. That is our own theory, Grub. *Je* means the ever-existent state, *sus* means to draw out, or drawn out.

"Now, Grub, one of two things is true: either the gnostic wisdom was wonderfully advanced in scientific research, or all this ecclesiastic stuff is the product of minds ages after the alleged time the Bible was written.

"But, I am not quite through with my story.

"Holy-ghost means the breath of respiratory beings.

"The pneumogastric nerve controls respiration.

"By the breath we may exercise the voice and express our thoughts in understandable words.

"We have seen the Christ principle enter the blood and become endowed with respiration and the power of speech.

"Upon receiving the power of speech amazement is expressed in this exclamation:

"'Are not all these that speak Galileans?'

"This was every man speaking the language of the tissues in which he is an element.

"The co-ordinate understanding, and intelligent co-operation between the dissimilar parts and tissues of the body is one of the great mysteries in physiology. This is wholly due to the nervous system and the circulating blood coming in contact with all these parts.

"The suggestion that the bone is the tomb of the Jesus principle is very well authenticated.

"The law forbade burial to those hanged upon a tree, the crucifixion, but a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also was a disciple of Jesus, prevailed upon Pilate to surrender the body of Jesus for burial.

"*Arimathaea* means vision, delusion, dream. A vision or dream of the increasing people.

"*Joseph* means increased numbers.

"Jesus was submerged in the increasing population of the earth. Hence the blood is found in every part of the body.

"Now listen to this:

"'Joseph wrapped the body in a *clean linen* cloth and laid it in his own new tomb which he had hewn out in the rock' (Matt. 27:60).

"We saw the red blood corpuscles shed their bloody garments and pass into the *lacunae cavities* in the bone from which it emerged a clear, transparent cell.

"That cavity is the tomb of Jesus, who is always pictured as arising from his tomb in a white shroud.

"*Rock* means a safe place, a refuge.

"The hard bone symbolizes the rock upon which Christ's church rests.

"*Arimathaea* also means little hill, a very fitting name to apply to the *lacunae*.

"Now, Grub, I am going to shock you by introducing to you the greater man. The man of the world has arisen. The resurrection is at hand and this is the true resurrection of the living body, a well-prepared plastic mass.

"The head, the vatican state.

"The thorax, Europe.

"The abdomen, the United States.

"The pelvic region, the high seas.

"That is the physical man.

"The nervous system, education.

"The blood, legislation.

"The lymph, commerce.

"The red blood corpuscles which draw the ever existent life from the producing earth, the bones.

"The white corpuscles, the professional classes, living off the system.

"This is the machinery of digestion now grinding out

its grist, in the stomach of modern civilization. The end seems inevitable.

"Already the nation is maimed beyond recognition.

"Useful education is not available to the masses.

"There is scarcely a wholly mental and physically healthy person to be found.

"Insanity is increasing faster than the population. It is impossible to provide for its care.

"Crime is overtopping the law.

"Senseless legislation is smothering the nation.

"Poverty is doing its deadly work.

"Heedless taxation is devouring the people. Calamity stands grinning, awaiting the harvest."

"Let us stop, Doctor. I can stand no more now," whispered Grub.

"Thus ended the dream of awakening the gnostic philosophy for the good of humanity. They found no visible God who could relieve the cruel situation.

"But," said the Doctor, "reaction is equal to action, and it is inevitable. No man or organization of men can suppress nature permanently.

"Accursed wars are but vicious irritants. Crime is insanity. Insanity will wipe civilization from the face of the earth.

"What a beastly ending of the grand purposes of nature. The provoking thing is, the conscienceless fools, who have brought all this upon humanity, have no greater capacity for suffering than their own victims, else nature would provide a special hell in which they might suffer through all eternity."

## CHAPTER XXIX

As the Doctor's thoughtful face appeared in the library, Grub recognized he had something serious upon his mind.


"While our subject has been deeply interesting and instructive, Grub, we have made it too all-absorbing. We are really neglecting important matters, for the constant study and research it requires. Therefore, I suggest that we attempt to summarize the essential truths of our previous discussions, and see if we may assemble them in a consecutive and understandable form.


"I have, from time to time, made memoranda of those things which most impressed me. I shall make a review of these our morning lesson.


"I am deeply impressed by your wave theory. It explains all, as nothing else can do, and while we have found intimations of an ulterior knowledge of the underlying principles involved, in so far as I am able to find, you are first to demonstrate the system of actual waves, adjusted to natural phenomena.





"These primary waves fitly symbolize the five senses, usually exercised by living organic beings:

 The globular electron symbolizes the eye, seeing.

 The spiral wave of nitrogen is symbolic of the ear, hearing.

 The spiral wave of oxygen symbolizes the sense of smell.

 The carbon straight line symbolizes taste.

 The spiral hydrogen molecule symbolizes touch.

"I remember that you explained to me that the primitive, or positive, set of waves begin as elongated spirals and I believe that is true.

"It is a truth, these waves reveal the origin and end of living bodies, and these are the only attitudes and motions material bodies can assume. Let me repeat:



|           |           |         |        |          |
|-----------|-----------|---------|--------|----------|
| Electron  | Nitrogen  | Oxygen  | Carbon | Hydrogen |
| Potential | Vibratory | Gaseous | Solid  | Fluid    |
| State     | Cold      | Warm    | Dry    | Moist    |
| Brain     | Flesh     | Muscle  | Bone   | Marrow   |
| Sun       | Moon      | Stars   | Land   | Sea      |

"The primary attitudes may manifest in consecutive waves, masses or consistency, but the principles involved are the same.

"The electron is the primary cell, the seat of the four active elements represented by the progressive waves of motion. These represent one original force in four aspects. This primitive motion is life, manifested in four states of being, necessarily substantial although immaterial. It is the process of assembling primary substance into material forms or bodies. It requires four elemental substances, created out of the original electron, to form the first molecule of matter. Subsequent accumulations and combinations develop bodies, and inspire growth.

"Vibratory, gaseous, solid and fluid.

"These are the creative attitudes and conditions which manifest in the first molecule.

"Life manifests in motion, and seeks embodiment and rest in matter. The five senses become individualized and are combined in one body, to promote physical growth, by the

acquisition of essential elements. This is the beginning of the sense of selectivity.

"The selection, acquisition and appropriation of external elements, for the nourishment of the body, is the sole reason for, and purpose of, the five external sense organs.

"The three waves, and the spiral, unite to form the living molecule, the first germ of embodied life, as symbolized by the hydrogen spiral, out of which evolves all subsequent living bodies. NOCH = 43.

"*Hydrogen* is from *hydor*, meaning water. Within this molecule is the spark of universal life, hence the saying that life on this planet begins in the waters.

"Axial motion is the first motion of independent, living bodies—organic being.

"Life constructs for itself a material body from the universal elements available for this purpose, and that primitive body is the molecule.

"Pardon me, Doctor, but this explains:

"'Except a man be born of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

"'That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the spirit is spirit.

"'Marvel not that I said unto thee, ye must be born again' (John 3:5, 6, 7).

"The fleshy body rises out of the water, and receives the spirit out of the atmosphere, making it a respiratory being, hence a being with organs, a living soul.

"'And the Lord God breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul' (Gen. 2:7).

"This clearly refers to embodied life arising from the first molecule of primary substance," and Grub looked at the Doctor for approval.

"You have the Biblical plagiarism right, Grub," said the Doctor. "You might have continued your quotation and cleared the question.

"There is a natural body and there is a spiritual body.



“The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam a quickening spirit.

“The first man is of the earth earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven’ (1 Cor. 15).

“This clearly distinguishes between the vegetation and the respiratory animals.

“Until the body receives the holy-ghost, the breath, it has no part in the kingdom of God, the respiratory world. It is the breath which converts the body into a living soul.

“The first molecule is the pristine body, the primary matter. Composite bodies are subsequent formations, combinations of materials of digestion and excretion.

“The excrement may be a living fruit, having productive powers, or it may be a lifeless deposit, to be rejuvenated by chemical processes.

“The first fruits, wines and liquors belong to God (Ex. 22). This is the living fruit.

“Through the priesthood, which even eats and drinks for the Lord.

“Selectivity is an inherent sense of the primitive hydrogen cell or molecule; constructive elements are selected and incorporated with the original cell, and this causes growth in living bodies, as an assembly of human beings form a community. Each individual being a cell in that aggregate body.

“The only direction in which a living, composite body may grow is outward. Therefore, it extracts the primary molecules from nourishing materials, and excretes the waste. In the process of excretion we see the living fruit of digestion, distributed and assimilated, to form the gross tissues of the body, and the dead products cast out of the body.

“The living elements are distributed to construct flesh, muscle, bone and marrow. Therefore, if ‘God manifests in the flesh,’ again the first fruits of digestion and assimilation belong to God—the gnostic God, a living excrement.

“The first living body becomes the pattern or model for all subsequent living bodies, in so far as the position of elements is found.

"In the primary cell is the hydrogen nucleus, surrounded by carbon, and having an atmosphere of oxygen and nitrogen.

"In the grosser living bodies this identical arrangement of elements is manifest in flesh, muscle, bone and marrow. Therefore we may recognize the controlling element in each of these structures.

"This applies to organic bodies, as distinguished from vegetation, which draws its life direct from the earth and atmosphere. Nevertheless, the same elemental disposition is revealed, but reversing the position of the waves:



"Now, my boy, we are getting at the truth.

"The primary set of waves is the sowing of the seeds. The spiral molecule carries the sense of reproduction.

"The secondary set of waves produces the fruits.

"We recognize our own planet as an exaggerated model of such a life cell, and this makes visible to us the mysterious processes of development of the original, invisible, electric molecule into greater, composite, material bodies.

"The sun, moon, stars and earth reveal the original source of our materials for physical and mental development.

"The spiral represents the female principle, therefore, it is the agent of both secretion and excretion—a magnetic attitude.

"The universal, physical life of the waters creeps out upon the land, becoming visible. The life beneath the earth comes to the surface and assumes visible forms.

"This is the first motion of revelation.

"There is but one great purpose in this; it is to develop *vision*, to form contact with light; hence, the secondary or reverse set of waves must complete the cycle.

"This reveals the foundation of the ecclesiastic symbol-

isms based upon the visible, heavenly bodies, in nature worship.

"This reveals an astonishing system :

- The original electron, a globule, symbolizes the source of life, for visible material beings. The sun is the revelation of life as light.
- The terminating circle, at the end of the cycle, is the *awakening* of vision, the opening of the eye, symbolizing the knowledge and presence of God (Heb. 4:13).

"The ecclesiastical reconstruction of these waves reverses the secondary series thus, beginning with the circle and descending to the spiral—a contrary motion.



Priesthood  
Wisdom, Church and State

The People

"This places the circle in the primitive attitude of the original electron.

"Do you see, now, how the church stands between wisdom and common humanity?

"The circle symbolizes the moon—the church.

"The spiral symbolizes the earth—humanity.

"In the code *moon* means the *measurer*.

"The *earth* means *producing humanity*.

"The atmosphere is church and state combined.

"*Atmosphere* is from the Sanskrit *at man*, meaning breath, soul, a surrounding medium. Hence the soul essence is in the atmosphere. We continually breathe this into our bodies.

"God is not visible in this reversed set of waves. God is the sun, hence this reversal of waves.

"To make God visible would reveal that this is but a system of planetary and nature worship.

"'God is a spirit ; and they that worship him must worship him in spirit' (John 4:24).

“‘No man hath seen God at any time’ (John 1:18).

“‘It is the spirit that quickeneth’ (Jno. 6:63).

“We know the sunlight quickeneth every living thing on the earth.

“There is a very good and sufficient reason why the sun is not visible in this reversed set of waves. The moon, which symbolizes the church, is the lesser light which ‘rules the night.’

“Night means darkness, ignorance.

“The christian day begins in the *evening*.

“‘The evening and the morning was the first day’ (Gen. 1:5).

“It is a self-evident fact that this is not true. Between evening and morning is the night. That is when we have the moonlight. This makes a period of ignorance the ecclesiastic day.

“It is the spiritual training of humanity which the church seeks.

“This abnormal day means a gospel period.

“It may mean twelve hours or it may mean a thousand years—the thousand years when ecclesiasticism bound humanity in abject ignorance (485 to 1496)—the ‘dark ages.’

“We may now appreciate the value of the secret ecclesiastical code for interpreting the ‘great mystery.’

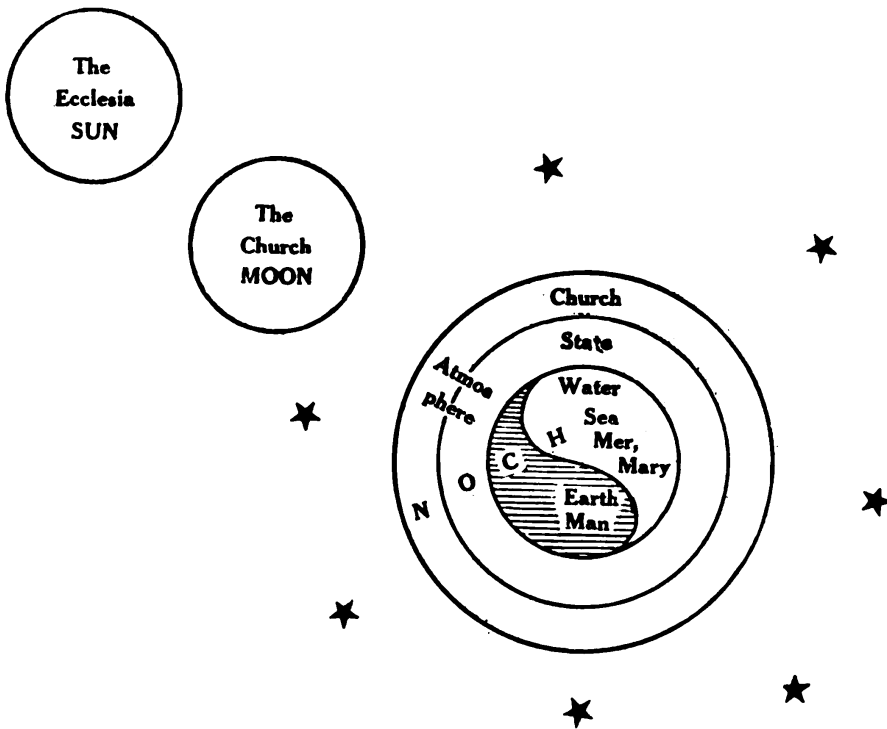
“The stars mean princes, principalities, civil governments under church control, and pope-appointed rulers.

“The sea means *mer*, *Mary*, rebellion, turbulent commotions.

“Mary is the church mother, giving birth to the high-priest (Heb. 7:26).

“*Mary* is but the Greek form of *Miriam*, meaning rebellion; the sister of *Moses*, the law and *Aaron*, the teacher.

“We may now diagram this with perfect understanding, and eliminate the sun from the earthy vision. It is the ecclesia hiding behind the church; sun-worship hiding behind christianity.



"The greater circle here represents the primitive, reproductive molecule.

"It was necessary to name the visible stars as princes, because they could not be concealed, shining brighter by night than by day. Jesus names himself 'the bright and morning star' (Rev. 22:16). 'The prince of life' (Acts 3:15).

"But, we have a more certain way of convicting the church, by its own Bible, and its secret code.

"So all the generations from Abraham to David are *fourteen* generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon are *fourteen* generations; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ are *fourteen* generations (Matt. 1:17).

"This aggregates forty-two generations.



N. 14

O. 16

C. 12 = 42.

"They put man and woman as one in carbon.

"Where is the hydrogen spiral?

"Why the moon, of course, cast off the side of the earth.

"The rib taken out of the side of Adam.

"*Mary* is derived from *mer*, the sea, and Mary is the church.

"It was necessary to leave off the spiral:



The Head  
of Christ

The Head  
of Man

The Head  
of Woman

(1 Cor. 11:3).

"Jesus repudiated his own mother because of this (Matt. 12:48).

"The earth was not directly attached to the moon, hence, the woman here is the female principle in man, becoming the symbol of the church on earth.

"In the word *Ad-am*, *am* means the female deity.

"This knowledge betrayed in the secret use of these waves, makes it perfectly clear that the authors of all this cunning Bible stuff were deeply versed in the gnostic philosophy, or else the Bible was produced ages after its alleged origin.

"If this is not true, then so-called modern science is a fake, and the alleged discoveries of the 17th, 18th and 19th centuries were in connivance with jesuitry—the then only source of such wisdom—the stolen and secreted wisdom of gnosticism.

"Grub, here is the great mystery which Jesus revealed to his disciples but withheld from the people.

"The sunlight is not Jesus Christ. It is the civil government ruling by day—ruling the physical man—the ecclesia.

"The light received from the moon is a reflected light—the radiated light of the sun is reflected to the earth by the moon, and that moon-light symbolizes wisdom.

"'Christ is the wisdom of God' (1 Cor. 1:24).

"Do you now see how Jesus is the son of God, and Mary, as symbolizing the moon? The church on earth becomes the mother of Jesus. This removes all doubt about christianity being sun-worship, concealed by symbolism.

"When Jesus declares:

"'I am the light of the world' (John 8:12), he means he is the subjective mind of man, smothered by ecclesiasticism.

"See how simple the idea, that he is also the 'son of man.'

"Ad-am means a union of the male and female principles in the earth.

"*Ad* means heat, passion.

"*Am* means the female deity.

"Human intellect is the 'Christ within us.'

"Do you see now what is meant by the great sacrifice of Jesus, the crucifixion?

"The wisdom of the world was deliberately destroyed. Gnosticism—to know—was throttled, and all humanity was cast into the darkness of utter ignorance for a thousand years, that the reflected wisdom of the *moon*, the measurer, the church, might take the place of the greater light of the sun—natural enlightenment of the school of nature.

"Are you beginning to grasp the character of this dastardly crime against nature and all mankind?

"Do you now understand the significance of Adam being kicked out of the 'Garden of Eden' for partaking of knowledge directly from nature?

"Do you see the significance of the 'deep sleep' put upon Adam, and the taking of woman from his side?

"Woman means the body politic.

"Both knowledge and civil government were to be taken from the masses of humanity.

"The woman was not driven out of the *Garden of Eden*, meaning a place of *culture and pleasure*.

"Do you grasp, now, the significance of nunneries?

"Is it to be supposed that fat, lazy, lascivious priests would stand for being deprived of their women?

"The most vulgar and loathsome human history is of the

vicious lives of the popes, and the priesthood, in relation to women. Monasteries and nunneries, like jesuitry, have frequently been suppressed throughout Europe.

"But, I am not through with similitudes and personifications.

"Gnosticism taught that, organic life upon this planet was a reflected image of the planetary system, with mankind as the final revelation.

"It was to suppress this natural revelation that ecclesiasticism suppressed gnosticism. Did mankind become fully aware of the purposes of nature, every man would realize that he was a god in himself.

"Even the ecclesiasts could not wholly conceal this.

" 'Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?' (1 Cor. 3:16).

"Jesus himself is made to say:

" 'I said, ye are gods' (John 10:34).

"The jesuit schools were secretly established to conceal the confiscation of the gnostic wisdom in order that the church might pose as the enlightener of mankind, and the revealer of inspired wisdom. The unanswerable proof of this is in the fact that gnostic wisdom existed thousands of years before Christianity was dreamed of by cunning, usurpative minds.

"It is an extraordinary fact that Lavoisier is given credit for having discovered both nitrogen and oxygen, while associated with jesuitry. But, unfortunately, he took it upon himself to give names to his discoveries which were dangerously offensive to the church. He revealed these secret discoveries.

"He named nitrogen *azote*, meaning *no-life*, because nitrogen is a non-supporter of embodied life, and a decomposer of organic matter.

"This upset the stories of life in the *Mazarin Bible*, then in use by the church.

"His discovery of oxygen wholly upset the *Phlogistic* theory of chemistry, upon which the Bible was based. It eliminated fire as a spirit, and knocked old Abraham's eye



out. Abraham represented that spirit, coming out of *Ur*, fire.

"There is little doubt about Lavoisier's having been beheaded for having revealed the false-pretense of Biblical antiquity, and that the gnostic philosophy was the source of Biblical wisdom.

"If a five year old child insults a priest, or kills a modern policeman, it must die. As the bastard child of David and Bath-sheba was murdered to save the face of the church, although David had killed Uriah and prostituted his wife.

"David is named as the 'father of Jesus Christ' (Matt. 1:1).

"Such vulgarities found in the Bible condemn christianity as an unworthy thing.

"An analysis of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, as given in Matthew 1, by the ecclesiastic code, reveals it to be simply the essential elements in the organization and conduct of the church, as the twelve characters forming Israel portray the establishing of the priesthood of the church of Christ.

"The alleged Hebrew stuff of the old testament, with all its vulgarities, is merely the preliminary outlining and planning of the real, active christian church.

"It is neither history nor truth, but a fabulous romance, inspiring more of evil than of good.

"Now let us make a brief comparison of the human body with what the life waves have revealed to us. If we find that we can construct the human body in a manner for its organs and parts to reflect an image of the creative source, we shall have solved the whole mystery. The image and likeness theme is not a myth.

"There are four plains of manifestation, as revealed by the fishes of the waters; the respiratory animals of the land; the fowls of the air, and then what?

"Who is so rash as to declare there is no life in the vibratory world?

"Scales, hair, feathers mean that physical bodies must be clothed, therefore, the absence of any further external cover-

ing means that the vibratory life is not physical. This tells us why nitrogen is an agent of decomposition.

"A composite body cannot reside in the vibratory state. Nevertheless, the original monks attempted to establish for themselves, in Egypt, a monastic colony which they named *nitria*. They made themselves so obnoxious, the emperor of that country drafted five thousand of them into menial service, thus automatically fulfilling the law of nature.

"The church symbolizes the nitrogenous life on earth, associated with the oxygen of civil government.

"'God is spirit' (John 4:24).

"'The father judgeth no man' (Jno. 5:22).

"We may now draw these deductions:

"The electron is the seed and source of all.

"The soul essence is in the atmosphere—nitrogen.

"The spirit essence is oxygen drawn from sunlight.

"'It is the spirit that quickeneth' (Jno. 6:63).

"The spiral at the end of the primary set of waves is the first embodied life, hence the seat of life is in the living cells of the physical body.

"The circle at the end of the first cycle is the awakening of vision.

"This identifies the nitrogenous brain as the seat of unembodied life, the spirit, and the heart the seat of embodied life, the soul, oxygen.

"The mechanical seat of respiration is in the thorax, and by the breath the holy-ghost enters the body, making the whole body a 'living soul,' proving again that the distributive seat of life is in the primitive living cells, and by their magnetic character bind spirit, soul and body together.

"The most ancient philosophies have likened the organs of the human body to the planetary bodies:

"Mercury—the head or brain.

"Venus—the heart.

"Earth—the stomach.

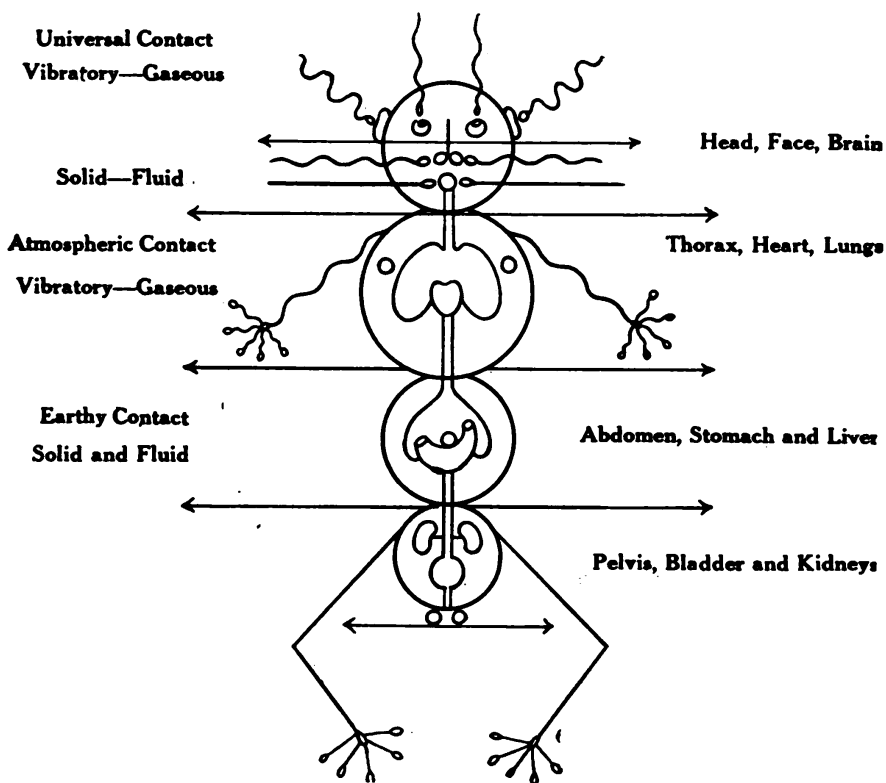
"Mars—the kidneys.

"The asteroids symbolize the bones.

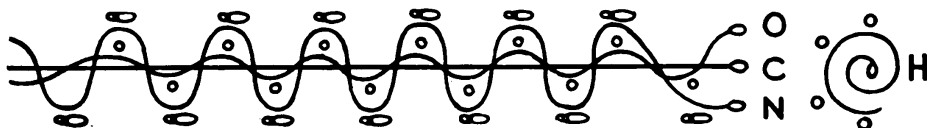
"The planets external to the asteroids figure the external physical structures.

"It is the moon principle which is so amazingly revealed in the human organism.

"Let us diagram this composite 'image and likeness':



"The act of walking brings the body in contact with all the elements. The legs are in contact with carbon. The arms reach out for oxygen. The up-and-down motion executes the nitrogen wave, the forward step the oxygen. They follow a straight line, carbon to the spiral turn, hydrogen:



"This, doubtless, was the origin of the caduceus of mythology, the head with the body.

"Also observe that the head is the receiving station for every element which enters the body for nourishing and stimulating purposes.

"There are twelve openings upon the external surface of the body, including the dormant navel—these are the twelve gates of Rev. 21:21. Seeing and hearing are afferent; smelling and tasting are dual.

"The breasts are efferent.

"The navel is dormant.

"The two pelvic openings are efferent in relation to their excretive functions.

"Respiration unites the head and thorax.

"Nutrition binds together the thorax, the abdomen and pelvis.

"Thus are your waves vindicated.

"Vibratory, gaseous, solid and fluid.

"The four basic operations are clearly defined as inspiration, respiration, assimilation and elimination.

"Our attention is drawn to a most significant thing. We made the larger circle in the illustration of the organs of the body in our manuscript by using a fifty cent silver coin of 1917. On the face of this coin is the word 'liberty,' beneath which is the goddess of plenty with her arms grasping a sheaf of grain, and the sun casting its rays over the world, as the 'light that quickeneth.'

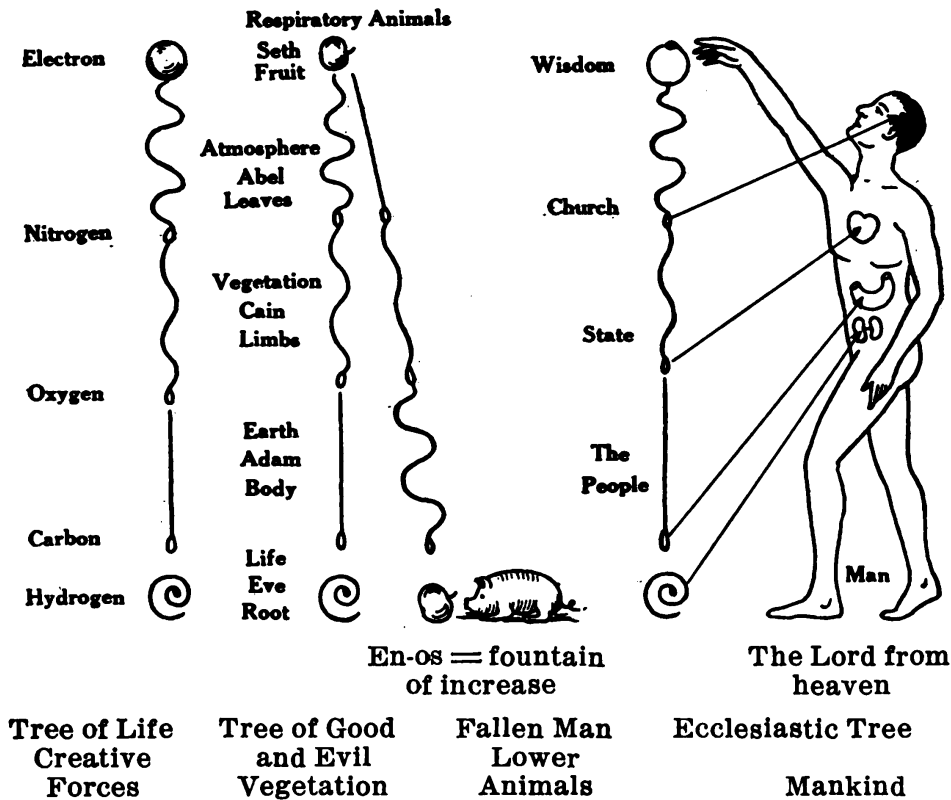
"What a sarcasm for a government to employ such things, in view of the abuses of nature by alleged religious bodies protected and coddled by government.

"I am stealing your thunder, Grub, something which Mercury could not steal from Jupiter. But I do not believe Mercury could read or write. If he could, one could find some of his letters in the bla-bla collections of some of our American museums.

"I'm going to show you one of my own diagrams using your wave system, showing some of the Biblical ideas, based upon the same gnostic philosophy.

"It reveals why:

" 'God hath made man upright' (Ecc. 7:29).



"An analysis of this leaves little difference between man and monkey. The root word of both being *mon*, *monna*, an ape. *Monu*, mind, to think, cognate with *os*. En-os, son of Seth, means fallen man. *En* = fountain of increase, *os* = mind, soul. Hence fallen man, subject to temptation, becomes the source of nourishment of the thinking man, as the fallen fruit becomes the food of the living animal groveling on the earth.

"The illustration reveals that God, having made man stand erect, the temptation to partake of the fruit direct from the tree is ever before him.

"The lesson intended by Genesis 2:17 is made very plain in this diagram.

"The first Adam is *vegetation*, evolved to the *respiratory*

*animal* which has partaken of the forbidden fruit. God curses the ground, and declares *Adam* shall ever after partake of his nourishment from its dust, as we here see the animal eating of the fallen fruit.

"Originally God gave to the man for his food, the 'fruits having seeds in themselves,' growing upon trees. But, to the birds and beasts he gave 'every green herb.'

"Now, here is where we find the inverted tree, with the second Adam, the 'Lord from heaven,' plucking its fruits in the form of the ring, instead of the globule. This serpent with his tail in its mouth symbolizing wisdom—gnostic philosophy.

"This ring, as we have previously learned, represents the cumulated wisdom, power, experience and life of the whole cycle. The waves show the elements it contains and the organs to which they are distributed. Hence it is made plain that the first fruit of this sustaining tree of life belongs to God—the Lord from heaven, the priest.

"Do you now see why the *ecclesia* means government, and why the *earth* means producing mankind?

"Debased humanity was made a source of maintenance and support for the church and priesthood. Ignorance, oppression and misery were commercialized.

"The positive evidence of this is in the fact, *Enos* begat *Cainan*, meaning merchandising and trading, and possession.

"See how plain this is:

"*Adam*, the earth, and *Eve*, life, produce the vegetation. This is named *Cain*.

"Even in the Bible dictionaries the word *Cain* is defined as a fabrication, forged instrument. The name *Cain* does not appear in Webster's.

"The vegetation evolutes into the respiratory animals. This they name *Seth*, meaning *compensation*, pay.

"*Seth* has reference to the Egyptian *Sothic year*, therefore is a measure of time.

"The compensation, or pay, is in the exchange between the vegetation and respiratory animals.

"The animal inhales oxygen, and exhales carbon dioxide.

"The vegetation inhales carbon dioxide, and exhales oxygen.

"This is the *commerce of Cainan* set up between vegetation and animals, in *Abel*, the breath, the atmosphere.

"The animal cannot rise to the living fruit of the tree, therefore nature by gravitation drops the fruit to the earth inspired with the sense of reproduction. The animal partakes of the fruit and is inspired with the desire to rise up with the new tree that it may partake of the fruit directly from the tree. This aspiration first manifests in the monkey, which climbs up the body of the tree and appropriates the fruit direct.

"This monkey evolves into man, who can stand erect and gather the fruit, and distribute portions of it to the lower animals, thus avoiding the fate of the lower animal who is *tempted to climb the tree to confiscate the fruit, and falls*. This is the fall of man.

"This is *Enos, mortal man, subject to temptation and fall*.

"The proof that this has reference to the vegetation is plain in the naming of the offspring of Enos, *Cain-an*.

"*Cain* means, in this figurative system, vegetation; *an* is a suffix meaning pertaining to or belonging to. This gives to Cain possession by contact.

"We may determine, by this, that the ecclesiastic scheme stole a march on nature by inserting a fake set of waves, which places vegetation and the lower animals between the creative waves and themselves, thereby breaking the line of natural evolution and making the godlike man a special dispensation.

"This was a horrible error. It filled the minds of men with vain conceit, and made them thieves and robbers, to prey upon nature. It destroyed the mental trend of man towards a natural goal, and mankind ran wild.

"The ecclesiasts purposely, and wilfully, placed the greater mass of humanity back on a level with the dumb, unthinking animals, by casting the people into a thousand years of ignorance, to prevent the common herd from standing erect as men and partaking of wisdom directly from the tree of nature.

That which had been given to men to inspire a progressive rise to mental perfection, to bring them in direct contact with the universal wisdom, was ruthlessly snatched away from them by the most contemptible and abnormal creature ever spawned upon earth—the ecclesiastical priest, who lives, thrives and fattens off struggling humanity. This lesion has not been and may never be mended.



## CHAPTER XXX

Grub was waiting in the library for the appearance of the Doctor. It seemed he was prepared for some emergency. When the Doctor came in, he at once began :

"Doctor, you remember you requested me to make a memorandum, which would recall, at a suitable time, the subject of mythology, as an element in the exploitation of the ecclesiastic scheme. I am ready to take this up, if it pleases you. I am sure you will be greatly edified to learn that, after all, mythology is but a romantic exploitation of a knowledge of astronomy, and its personification is, practically, the foundation of the christian structure."

"I am pleased to have you bring up the subject, Grub. I have nothing particular to offer this morning. There is always something fascinating about both, mythology and astronomy."

"Well," began Grub, "we are both interested in identifying the 'image and likeness' man, for that will, naturally, identify the God who made him.

"I shall assume that the God who made the earthy man is a cosmic being, and that our knowledge of our immediate planetary system reveals him.

"The essential elements in this picture are: the central sun, the eight planets and their moons—and especially the asteroidal belt.

"In 1772, Professor Bode announced a peculiar law for ascertaining the relative distances of the planets from the sun, even to anticipating Uranus and Neptune, which allegedly had not then been discovered. But the most wonderful thing about his discovery was, he declared a planet should be found between Mars and Jupiter, its chemical number corresponding with Silicon 28. He was later vindicated by the discovery of the asteroids at that point.

"Doctor, I have named the asteroidal belt the carbon bone

of the planetary man, and it specifically corresponds with our carbon wave, and it very materially helps to solve our problem.

"The asteroidal belt separates the planets into inner and outer bodies, as follows:



Neptune—son of Saturn, god of the sea.



Uranus—heaven, son of the earth, moon principle.



Saturn—Cronus, father time, father of Jupiter.



Jupiter—God of heaven and earth, father of gods and men.



The asteroidal belt—the planetary bone.



Mars—the water planet, god of tempest, strife, war.



Earth—the producer, producing humanity.



Venus—mother of love, protector of commerce.



Mercury—god of commerce, protector of rascals and thieves.



The Sun—the ever-existent one, the sustainer.

*"Waters* mean peoples, and a multitude of laws.

*"The asteroidal belt is the firmament.*

*"'And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament, and it was so.*

*"'And God called the firmament heaven' (Gen. 1:7, 8).  
Heaven means government.*

"It is peculiar, that the four outer planets, by their descriptions, are recognized as spiritual bodies, and the inner planets are material, showing an extraordinary knowledge of modern astronomy, which believes that all the inner planets are solid bodies, and the planets external to the asteroids are gaseous.

"Now, this could be derived from no other source but from the gnostic philosophy, and it has been doled out to modern humanity, thus concealed in romantic symbolism.

"The parents of Mercury were Jupiter and *Maia*, the goddess of growth.

"Jupiter and *Maia* are equated with Joseph and Mary.

"*Maia*, *Maya*, *Mara*, *Maria*, *Myrrha*, *Miriam* and *Mary*, are all one, and are derived from *Mer*, the sea, and they all mean rebellion and troubles.

"*Jupiter* and *Jehovah* are one.

"*Ju* = *Juda*—the Jews.

"*Piter* = Peter, pater, papa, pope.

"St. Peter and St. Patrick are derived from the same root word—pater, father, priest.

"*Joseph* = *Jo* = increased; *sepher* = numbers.

"*Abraham* = *ab* = father, *ra* = the sun, *ham* = hot.

"The hot sun, the father of us all (Rom. 4:16).

"*Maia* is associated with *Pan*.

"*Pan* means all, universal. Catholic means universal.

"*Juno*, queen of heaven, daughter of Cronus.

"*Ju* = *Jehovah*, *no* = place—place of *Jehovah*.

"*Ops*, mother of *Juno*.

"*Juno* was the mother of Mars and the wife of Jupiter. She is the church.

"*Ju-piter* is the Jews and St. Peter.

"*Jesus*—*Je* = ever existing, *sus* = sustainer.

"*Christ* is cognate with *Sophia*, wisdom.

"*Sophos*, Greek for wisdom.

"*Christ* and *Sophia* both stand for incarnated wisdom.

"Christ declares: 'I am the door.'

"He exclaimed to the lawyers:

"'Ye have taken away the key to knowledge.'

"Thus it is admitted knowledge existed and was suppressed.

"*Sophia*, the virgin of light, is traced to:

"*Ophis*, the light of the living.

"*Oph-elia* means serpent, symbol of wisdom.

"You remember our examination of magnetism, and how we found that the christians suppressed it because it encroached upon the fabulous healing powers of Christ, but *Mesmerism* was secretly introduced.

"When we analyze the word *Mesmerism* we find, again, the cunning intrigue of the church.

"*Mes* = *Meso*, meaning middle, medium, mediator.

"*Mer* means the sea, Mary, the church.

"There is one God, and one mediator, between God and men, the man Christ Jesus' (1 Tim. 2:5).

"Jesus went about healing all manner of sickness and disease among the people' (Matt. 4:23).

"Do you see, now, the necessity for the suppression of magnetism?

"*Magnetism*, *hypnotism* and *mesmerism* are equivalent in principles.

"A peculiar form of hypnotism, developing hysteria, is the very essence of christian conversion.

"It manifests a kind of dementia, which often terminates in insanity.

"Necessarily, superstition and fear are the secret agents to beget faith. The so-called charity of the church merely collects from Peter to pay Paul.

"St. Peter merely symbolizes the congregation.

"Paul means the church worker, and the grave.

"But now, Doctor, we are drawing near to the end of our story.

"Mythology reveals the truth.

"Christianity is nothing more nor less than a romantic novel, involving the gnostic astronomy and philosophy, in an elaborate system of symbols, and personifications, concealed in a secret ecclesiastical code.

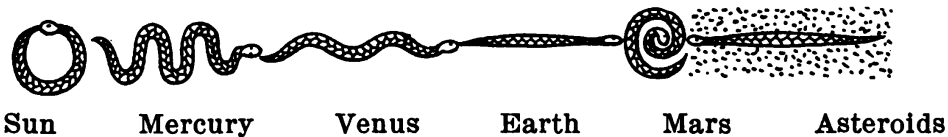
"Moreover, the work does not attempt to extend its knowledge beyond our visible, planetary system, with the sun as the central body, it works outward, thereby admitting the law, that, all expanding bodies grow outwardly.



"Applying this idea to the products of this earth, the

sun is made the external source of all planetary force, and the earth is made the central spiral. Hence we find the ecclesiastical system appropriating to its exclusive purposes the waves between the sun and the earth, and reversing these waves in the development of an earthy system, as an image of the heavenly. Therefore, the only place we may look for this image is to examine the physical productions upon the face of this earth.

"In the intervening space, between the sun and the asteroidal belt, there are four orbital planes, and in each plane may be found a planet, which are, in their order, from the Sun, Mercury, Venus, Earth and Mars.

"These respond to our waves.



"It is at once seen that the asteroids represent mixture and confusion, which first arose in the development of life upon this earth, out of which arises Jupiter Saturn , and Uranus,  concealed government; the church, and heaven.

"*Heaven* means nothing, nothingness.

"It is a good joke that God says:

"'I am the beginning and the end.'

"This all begins in nothing and ends in nothing."

"Grub," said the Doctor, "you have presented a remarkably clear and understandable case. I am much pleased. But will you more elaborately define the word *heaven*. It is the first thing God made, and both mythology and the ecclesiasts begin their systems with heaven and earth."

"The code very definitely proves the absurdity of both systems, in fact, frankly acknowledges their fraudulent character," said Grub.

"*He* is merely the masculine prefix to *aven*, meaning

nothing or nothingness. The analysis of the word *nothing* is quite sufficient.

"*Nothing* means, not anything, of no service, of no force to bind or oblige, false and groundless, no divine power.

"And this is the heaven.

"The code significance of *heaven* is *ecclesiastic government*. Therefore, ecclesiasticism condemns itself, by its own secret code, as guilty of fraud and false-pretense.

"It attempted to conceal the truth that it organized, in secrecy, the *ecclesia*, a form of government control, before it introduced the church as its shield.

"The first ten words in the Bible are quite sufficient to condemn the whole system.

"First, the original manuscript, from which the book was translated, used the plural form, the gods created the heavens and the earth.' This was deliberately and fraudulently translated in the singular, 'God' and 'heaven.'

"Secondly, the ecclesiasts knew they were planning a conspiracy against mankind and its civil governments.

"*Heaven* means ecclesiastical government, *earth* means producing humanity."

"That clears that up," said the Doctor.

"Continuing, Grub said:

"Now listen to this, Doctor, and blush for humanity, because of its childish credulity:

"'*God came from Teman*, and the holy one *from Mount Paran*' (Habakkuk 3:3).

"This is the most amazing confession found in the Bible, corroborating, as it does, that the origin of the whole scheme was in the early, monastic orders of militant monks of Egypt. Ecclesiasticism was compelled to adopt these hellish orders by absorption, to suppress them.

"*Teman* means the desert.

"*Paran* means the places of caves.

"*Jesus* allegedly was born in a cave.

"*Mount* means a school.

"Do you remember the monks of *Nitria* in Egypt?

"*Nitra* is cognate with *nitre* — the salt petre of commerce, a cleansing power. St. Peter is salt petre, in the sense of the cleansing power of the church. The alleged purpose of the church is to cleanse humanity of its sinfulness. The idea is derived from the *purging* by salts. Josiah began to purge Jewery (11 Ch. 34:3).

"*Josiah* means the fire of the Lord. *Fire* means judgments.

"In the code, *salt* means wisdom, and gospel doctrines.

"God, then, came from the burning desert.

" 'For our God is a consuming fire' (Heb. 12:29).

"Jesus, the holy one of God (Luke 4:34) is also the holy one of Israel (Is. 37:23), born of monkish meditations in the caves of *Paran*. Teman was the eldest son of Esau.

"Now we are seeing the light.

"God is of the line of the eldest son of Esau, therefore, God also is a man. *Jesus* is of the line of the younger twin, Jacob. Israel, the church of Christ. *Ab-ra-ham*, the high, hot sun, is the father of all (Rom. 4:16).

"*Paran*, the place of caves, is surrounded: on the north by *Canaan*—merchandising and trading; on the south by the desert of *Sinai*—ambush and enmity; on the west by *Etham*—strength, sea and troubles; on the east by *Arabah*—the desert, mixture of peoples. *El-Paran* means the caves of *first cause*.

"Now, Doctor, we are ready to check off the whole christian scheme as the merest bunc.

"This frank confession of its earthy and carnal origin is quite sufficient to condemn it. We must examine this closely later.

"*Eli* means God, and I believe that *Phaz* is cognate with *Pashur*, meaning freedom, the head of a priestly family, 'chief governor in the house of the Lord' (Jer. 20:1) who imprisoned Jeremiah.

"Jeremiah declared that Pashur's true name, given him by the Lord, was *Magor-missabib*, which means *fear everywhere*. *Eli-phaz* was the son of Esau, earthy producing hu-

manity, and Esau was the twin brother of Jacob the supplanter, the usurper, who swindled Esau out of his heritage.

"Right here we have the true origin of the christian church as a game of graft.

"'Jacob vowed a vow, saying, if God will be with me and will keep me, and will give me bread to eat, and raiment to put on, then shall the Lord be my God.

"'And of all that thou shalt give me I will surely give the tenth unto thee' (Gen. 28:20, 22).

"The place where this bargain with the priesthood was made was named by Jacob, *Bethel*, meaning the house or church of God.

"Preceding this bargain, the place was known as Luz, meaning separation.

"This was the absorption of the monastics by the ecclesia.

"Esau was given the name *Edom*, meaning the hairy Horites living in Mt. Seir, the hairy cave dwellers. *Mount* means school—the school of the monastics.

"*Jacob* becomes *Israel*, meaning the church of Christ.

"Thus we see how Jesus comes out of the line of Jacob—Israel.

"Why Israel?

"*Is* = light, *ra* = the sun, *el* = first cause.

"The light of the sun is the first cause.

"The monks went to the desert believing it was nearest the sun.

"Jesus declares:

"'I am the light of the world' (John 8:12).

"'A teacher from God' (Jno. 3:2).

"Light means knowledge, enlightenment.

"'The light of Israel shall be for a fire' (Is. 10:17).

"I find, Doctor, that this far-reaching organization has appropriated and made use of not only the visible things of heaven and earth, but also the established things of the nations, and have duly coded them.

"*Government*—rule, authority.

"*Commerce*—trading together.



"*War*—embroilment.

"*Agriculture*—cultivating the field.

"*Education*—not coded.

"That's all, Doctor. I'm done."

"Huh!" grunted the Doctor. "And we are no nearer to a universal mental contact than when we started."

"Why, Doctor, we could not exist as living, breathing creatures, were we not constantly in direct mental contact with the external world, and that is the universal world. Contact is the simplest part of it, to know and to understand, that is the great goal of living, thinking, reasoning beings. Mankind has been blinded and guided away from the natural paths leading to wisdom and knowledge. The church never intended that the common, producing masses should become enlightened or learned beyond the necessities of their trades, hence, education is not found in the ecclesiastical code. For a thousand years it meant death to attempt to gain knowledge.

"When we cast seeds into the earth or plant a tree, we tenderly cultivate, water and care for them until they bear fruits, and become useful to us.

"Christianity, to the contrary, in dealing with humanity, boasts of the opposite course.

"'And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldst keep his commandments or no.

"'And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger' (Deut. 8:2, 3).

"What was this wilderness?

"Let's see what the code reveals: *Wilderness* means an uncultivated waste; Paran meant also 'the desert of wandering,' in ignorance.

"This was the thousand years of ignorance, the 'dark ages,' and right here we shall get our flash-light on the surroundings of the designing cave-dwellers who hatched out the devilish scheme.

"The 'wilderness' embraces:

"*Paran*, meaning the place of caves.

"*Zin*, meaning sin.

"*Shur*, meaning walls, monastic walls.

"*Sinai*, meaning ambush, enmity.

"*Etham*, strength, army, turmoil.

"This is the wilderness of sin into which Christianity led humanity, to humiliate, tempt and try it, and there is no escape from it.

"The only cultivation for humanity at large, recognized by the church, is:

" 'Either make the tree good and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt and his fruit corrupt; for the tree is known by his fruit' (Matt. 12:33).

"This tree is mankind (Matt. 3:10; Ps. 1:3).

"This instruction is given in the early part of the new testament.

"From the very beginning of the christian enterprise the church has never ceased the cultivation of evil in mankind. It was originally founded upon sin of its own planting. Were not sin continued there would be no need of a church.

"Today, civil governments are aiding and abetting this hellish scheme by legislating the people into crime. It is by this legislative co-operation we may know that the civil government is in connivance with the church forces. It was a premeditated scheme to commercialize crime.

"There is no difference between the sale of indulgences to commit crime, by the church, and the fine for having committed crime, applied by the state.

"Never before, in all history, was crime so rampant as right now, and never before was the harvest of fines and penalties so rich as now."

"Just a moment, Grub, hurriedly said the Doctor, as he searched about for a paper. "That word *commercialize* reminds me of something important. Ah, here is what I was searching for.

"Grub, just as you say. There is a close agreement between the church and civil governments, in relation to the

underlying gnostic philosophy, which practically compels them to stand together, as against the producing masses. Nevertheless, I believe I have uncovered evidence which proves that the church is exactly what the Bible says it is, a usurpative interloper in its participation in national affairs, even boasting of tearing asunder the established nations, meaning thereby their destruction (Hab. 3:6).

“‘A bridle is put into the mouths of the people to cause them to err’ (Is. 30:28; Rom. 3:19).

“Briefly, here is my deduction:

“Originally the idea of a nation, or community of people, was founded upon a gnostic conception of the structure of the human body.

“Every man is a unit nation, so revealed in the gnostic wisdom as the microcosm. An assembly of men, associating themselves together for mutual purposes is a kingdom, with authority as the God-head—the king, the Lord.

“The seat of authority is in the head.

“The executive power is in the external body.

“The seat of commerce and exchange is in the thorax, as evidenced by respiration.

“The channels of commercial exchanges are the circulating blood and the lymphatics.

“The highest form of circulating medium of exchange is the circular discs, the red blood-corpuscles.

“Why did men adopt the golden disc as the highest medium of exchange in human transactions?

“This traffic is between the inner man and the outer man.

“The seat of production is in the abdomen, the products of digestion, the product for distribution being the leucocyte, carried to market by the lymphatics. The sales are made to the different classes of tissues, being brought in contact by the circulating blood, with the ever greedy pestiferous government seizing more than its proper share through devious forms of taxation and graft. Wherever an exchange occurs, may be found the nerve fibres awaiting a rake-off.

“Now, Grub, I declare: there is no place in this normal

arrangement for either church or war. They are both intrusive things. The most amazing thing in science is the harmonious, peaceful and just exchanges which occur between the elemental parts in the human organism.

"The unit man, when left to his own resources, knows nothing of the horrors of community life ruled by vicious legislative bodies, secretly controlled by so-called religious usurpers.

"Do you now understand why the monastic monks sought the place of caves in the flaming desert?

"The church is an obtrusive and usurpative intruder having the single purpose to rob and enslave mankind. War, which embroils nations, is its most deadly weapon.

"In its dishonest code, *war* means embroilment.

"And now, Grub, we have covered this subject. Let us prepare a summing up for our next and last lesson."

"Let's make it a review of my pictures," said Grub.

"No. Grub, I do not believe we should yet reveal the extent to which we have broken through the veil. We are not yet ready to teach. Let the thinking world absorb what we have revealed.

"I am deeply concerned regarding your automatic revelations. This will be a grand subject for future discussion.

"I suggest that we terminate this present work here. I thought of adding a summing up meeting, but I have changed my mind."

"Very well, Doctor," said Grub.